

THE
FIRST

A SWEET
ROMANTIC
COMEDY

Taste



ANNAH CONWELL

The First Taste

ANNAH CONWELL

Copyright © 2023 by Annah Conwell

All rights reserved.

No portion of this book may be reproduced in any form without written permission from the author, except as permitted by U.S. copyright law.

This is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are the products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, businesses, companies, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Cover design by Alt 19 Creative

Copyright © 2023 by Annah Conwell

All rights reserved.

No portion of this book may be reproduced in any form without written permission from the publisher or author, except as permitted by U.S. copyright law.

This is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are the products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, businesses, companies, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Cover design by Alt 19 Creative

To all the girls who dream of marrying their best friend.

To all the girls who dream of marrying their best friend.

*In the wake of every heartache, in the depth of every fear, there w
diamonds, diamonds, waiting to break out of here.*

-Diamonds, Johnnyswim

*In the wake of every heartache, in the depth of every fear, there were
diamonds, diamonds, waiting to break out of here.*

-Diamonds, Johnnyswim

Contents

Content Warnings

1. Sophie Cunningham

2. Bennett St. James

3. Sophie Cunningham

4. Bennett St. James

5. Sophie Cunningham

6. Bennett St. James

7. Sophie Cunningham

8. Bennett St. James

9. Sophie Cunningham

10. Bennett St. James

11. Bennett St. James

12. Sophie Cunningham

[13. Bennett St. James](#)

[14. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[15. Bennett St. James](#)

[16. Bennett St. James](#)

[17. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[18. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[19. Bennett St. James](#)

[20. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[21. Bennett St. James](#)

[22. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[23. Bennett St. James](#)

[24. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[25. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[26. Bennett St. James](#)

[27. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[Epilogue](#)

[Author's Note](#)

[Acknowledgments](#)

[About The Author](#)

[13. Bennett St. James](#)

[14. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[15. Bennett St. James](#)

[16. Bennett St. James](#)

[17. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[18. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[19. Bennett St. James](#)

[20. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[21. Bennett St. James](#)

[22. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[23. Bennett St. James](#)

[24. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[25. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[26. Bennett St. James](#)

[27. Sophie Cunningham](#)

[Epilogue](#)

[Author's Note](#)

[Acknowledgments](#)

[About The Author](#)

Content Warnings

This book is a closed door romance with all the sizzle, none of the
There are some makeout scenes, but no implied intimacy.

There are mentions of death of parents and examples of toxic relationships
There is a small scene in which a character is grabbed without
permission, but it is deescalated quickly.

Content Warnings

This book is a closed door romance with all the sizzle, none of the spice. There are some makeout scenes, but no implied intimacy.

There are mentions of death of parents and examples of toxic relationships. There is a small scene in which a character is grabbed without her permission, but it is deescalated quickly.

CHAPTER 1

CHAPTER 1

Sophie Cunningham

Being heartbroken should be a sport. It's exhausting enough, what with the crying and scream-singing Taylor Swift songs. Oh, and don't forget the fake smiling in public. Can't forget that. Especially now, when one of my best friends, Grace, is being kissed by her country star fiancé. My face is going to be sore after all this aggressive smiling.

Grace's birthday falls on New Year's Day, so *of course* her incredibly thoughtful fiancé Wyatt has thrown her a fantastic birthday party. If I'm bitter it's because I am, just not toward her. It's not Grace's fault that her dreams came true the same day mine died. She got proposed to on Christmas Eve, and I broke up with my boyfriend that same night.

I thought I was next in line to get proposed to. Instead, my boyfriend informed me that I wasn't marriage material, and we were just having sex this time. If you call constantly compromising my own needs and desires a relationship then yes, we had tons of it. Unfortunately for me, hindsight is 20/20. I saw his true colors too late.

"Aren't they just sickeningly adorable?" MJ—one of my other best friends and roommate—sighs as she drops into the seat next to me. I look up for

half-eaten cake at her. She resembles a mystical character from one of the books on the shelves behind her with her long black hair and arms covered in braided hemp bracelets.

Wyatt rented out Grace's favorite bookshop, The Secret Door, for the party. Every wall of this place is covered in books of all genres and Wyatt purposefully chose to sit in the section furthest from the romance novels to avoid any painful reminders. But Grace and Wyatt's love parade for the night goes on anyway, right as the clock struck midnight. He dipped her back and kissed her like they weren't going to live till tomorrow.

"Yep," I say, dropping my fork down and huffing. "I wish I could live with all happy tonight. But I've run out of energy to fake it," I admit and MJ gives me a look that says she gets the understanding.

Part of my life is over. "It's okay to be sad. You and Michael were together for a while and you thought he was going to propose and instead he showed his true self and broke up. Now, that part of your life feels wasted." MJ has this wonderfully dry way of speaking that makes you love her but also want to punch her. I sound something at her.

That her "Thanks," I say deadpan and she rolls her eyes.

Christmas "I'm telling you like it is because you deserve to address it and move on."

It's okay to be sad and upset and mourn that part of your life. We both know that. "My friend about mourning." She pauses and looks down at her ring-covered fingers. I reach out and grasp one of her hands, the cool metal of the rings pressing against my palm. MJ's mom died during her senior year of high school and it's a pain point that has always brought us together. My dad died while I was in middle school. So I know exactly why she's pausing.

Friends "MJ, it's okay, you don't have to—"

From my "She cuts me off with a wave of her other hand. Gemstones sparkle

of the catch the light. "I'm fine. You know I'm not good with emotional things, I'm never sentimental stuff, but I do know that you deserve so much more than I was to you, Soph. You deserve someone who loves your weird questions for their passion for food and your giant heart. The man your dad would choose for you. Michael wasn't that person, which I know hurts. But I know you can move on."

Like alcohol in a wound, her words sting but I know I need to hear them. The thing is, while I know Michael wasn't good for me, I'm not sure I deserve. Maybe he was right. All this time I thought we were getting somewhere but he saw me as a way to pass the time. What does that say about me? Am I just *fun girlfriend* material or am I *wife* material? My life isn't falling together, maybe that's it. I can spend some time getting myself together before I try dating again.

"I don't think I want to move on. Maybe I need to be single for a while." MJ shrugs and sits back in her chair in response. "Sounds good to me, I feel the same way. I'm tired of dealing with relationships." My ex-boyfriend broke up with her over the phone at 2 AM, saying he found his love of his life in the garden department of Home Depot. So I can move on! she'd be on board with my singleness mindset. An idea sparks to life in my head, making me straighten in my seat.

"Let's make a New Year's resolution, then," I say and MJ raises her eyebrows. "No guys this year. We stay single and focus on ourselves. I bet by the end of the year we'll feel refreshed and ready to get back into the dating world." MJ purses her lips as she mulls over my suggestion. "It couldn't hurt." She shrugs then sits up and holds out a hand. "No men until January first of next year."

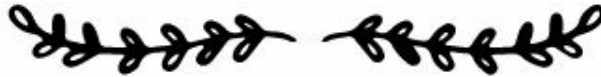
I place my hand in hers and give it a firm shake. "Deal."

things or

what he

sons and

ld have “Happy New Year!” Bennett’s voice booms through the townhouse. I
ut now head from where it was laying on my folded arms.



“Too loud,” I tell him when he walks into the kitchen where I’m lett
r them. kitchen island hold me up. Bennett has been my best friend since w
: what I kids, which is how I know he’s a morning person through and th
narried, Usually, I love that about him, but not today. Not when I haven’t slep
:? Am I than an hour in total.

totally “Agreed,” Grace grumbles from behind her giant coffee mug th
ogether *Bride to be*—Lottie’s birthday gift to her. Lottie is our newly marri
friend, and the sister to Grace’s fiancé, Wyatt.

hile.” “I thought I’d be walking into a happy house this morning. It
o me. I birthday, Grace! I brought donuts. Everything is great,” Bennett bea
J’s last sets several boxes of donuts on the counter with a flourish. His green e
und the bright and lively like grass in the springtime.

ee why “My fiancé is leaving the state for the entire month. And I’m not a n
: inside person, you know that. But thank you for the donuts,” Grace sa
musters a smile for him before going into the living room to nurse her
a brow. Wyatt has to finish recording an album this month and promised his
: end of label he’d spend the month in Nashville instead of here in Atlanta
d.” doesn’t want to abandon her students as a teacher, so they’re force
rt.” She long distance, which she’s not very enthused about.

of next Bennett turns to me, concern etched in his expression. “What abo
What’s wrong?”

“I couldn’t sleep last night after the party,” I tell him. “Michael posted a photo with another girl.” I let my head flop back down on my arms as the pain from seeing him move on so quickly. I guess I shouldn’t have expected anything different with how little he seemed to care about me in the end.

Normally I wouldn’t share any of this with Bennett, since he and I have a strict no-relationship-talk rule within our friendship, but after breakthrough with Michael that boundary has blurred. Bennett was there to comfort me when it happened, and now it feels weird to just ignore my heartbreak to my best friend.

“Sophie,” he groans. “How many times do I have to tell you that guy is not worth your tears? He’s definitely not worth losing sleep over.”

“I loved him, Bennett.” Silence falls over the kitchen, making me feel like I’ve hit my head again. Bennett is looking down at the counter, his expression unreadable. “Ben?” I tilt my head, wondering what’s on his mind.

When he looks up, he’s wearing a tight smile. “So you had bad judgment, but it’s no big deal,” he says and I roll my eyes. “Now you can learn from your morning mistake and move on.” He opens up the box of donuts and grabs a chocolate-glazed one, taking a big bite.

“Oh, I’ve definitely learned my lesson. Which is why I’ve sworn off coffee for the year.” Bennett starts to cough and sputter. “Are you okay?” I scramble to my feet, ready to help, but he waves his hands, indicating that he’s fine. “I need to do some work to swallow and then looks at me with wide eyes.

“You’ve sworn off men?” There’s a tinge of panic in his voice that makes me push my brows together in confusion.

“Just for the year. MJ and I made a pact to focus on ourselves.” I shrug and grab a maple bacon donut from the box. I’m more of a savory food

osted about I do love a good mixture of salty and sweet. Plus you can't go wrong with
I recall bacon.

't have "A year is a long time," Bennett says as he grabs a glass water bottle
by the fridge. MJ is environmentally conscious along with being
conscious, so we don't keep much plastic in our shared townhouse.

have a for all the snacks Grace and I bring in. Lottie used to bring in plenty of
king up but now she lives with her husband Callum who she married on Christmas
fort me Eve last year.

around I sigh when I think about that awful day. One best friend married, then
engaged, all on the same day I had my heart trampled on. That will make
y is not want to curl up in bed and not leave for a few days. Which is what I did
the party last night. Whenever I wasn't working in my food truck, I would
lift my sleep as an escape mechanism. Healthy, I know.

hidden. "I think it's the perfect amount of time. I don't want to end up like
again." I take a bite of the donut, the sweet maple glaze coating my
lip, before the salt of the bacon comes in and packs a smokey punch. I
from that mental note to try adding bacon to my signature spicy-sweet
a plain sandwich on my food truck menu.

"You can't close yourself off from dating just because of one guy
off men are better guys out there, Soph."

ramble I chew another bite of the donut while studying him. I'm not
line. He hearing relationship advice from Bennett. We haven't talked
relationships since he punched the guy who asked me to be his date
: makes middle school dance in the face and wouldn't give me a reason why.
probably immature of me to place a ban on all relationship talk forever
rug and was pretty upset. I went to my first middle school dance alone, after
person,

ng without a ban actually benefited me in high school when he became the city eligible bachelor.

le from The number of girls who wanted to date him was ridiculous. It's health judge them though, considering I was one of them. Somewhere rotten Except landfill is a notebook filled with the words *Sophie St. James* over and over as well, again. I can't even blame younger me, the combination of his last name and Christmas my first has a nice ring to it even now. I got over my crush when I saw

Bennett was more concerned with his studies and sports than being another boyfriend. Two-Date-Ben was his nickname for those four years, and I made you up to the moniker. He still does to this day, as far as I know.

lid until "I feel as though you're not equipped to be giving me relationship advice using Mr. Two-Date-Ben."

He cringes at the old nickname, then sighs. "I'm past that now. I've moved on like this up, you know," he grumbles as he grabs a napkin to clean his hands.

tongue "If you say so," I reply, knowing not to push him. Two small lines make a carved between his brows, the look that tells me if I keep going I'll be a chicken upset. And the last thing I want to do is get into an argument

relationships with Bennett. It doesn't concern me what he does with his life. There life.

"Anyway," I begin to change the subject. "What are you doing with your time today off today?" Bennett is an orthopedic surgeon and rarely gets time off about. Even his time off is usually on-call, ready to rush back to the hospital.

to the "I have my interview today, remember? Nice to see I have a best friend." It was who listens," he teases and I gasp.

er, but I "Oh no! I'm so sorry, Ben. I've been caught up in my pity party all day. But forgot. Are you nervous?" He's interviewing with the Georgia Tech today—our local college athletics department. They have their own de

's most medical staff, and Bennett is being considered to be their head orthopedic surgeon for the entire department.

hard to “A little,” he laughs softly and rubs the back of his neck. I smile and reach over to place my hand on his own. He looks down at our hands and then backs up.

me and “You’re an amazing surgeon and person, Bennett. They’d be crazy to hire you.” I pat his hand and then pull away.

an actual “Thanks, Soph, but I know there are probably a ton of other candidates who lived better than me. If my dad wasn’t a booster I wouldn’t be considered. I don’t even meet the experience requirement.”

advice, “Your dad might be the reason your name came up, but your accomplishments are how you made it this far. Don’t doubt your dad. I believe in you,” I say and he smiles. His dimples come out when he does and it makes me grin big too, even though that’s the last thing I feel like doing. “This is why we’ve been friends this long.”

he’ll be “Because I’m the sweetest?” I flutter my lashes and giggle.

it about “No, because you boost my ego,” he laughs and I hit his shoulder, and he’s laughing too.

As our laughter slowly fades, our eyes lock and my heart warms. I’m so grateful for Ben. He’s the only one who could make me laugh in this situation. “Thanks for cheering me up, Ben,” I say and his eyes crinkle.

“Anything for you, Soph.” Something is different in his gaze. Something I haven’t seen before. And I would know, because I’ve looked into those eyes often since I was five years old. I can’t place my finger on it though, and I brush it away. No sense in working myself up over a look.

crashers

dedicated

ropedic

at him,
ds for a

/ not to

ididates
I don't

id your
rself. I
oes and
ing.

but end

I'm so
tate.

ething I
e green
gh, so I

CHAPTER 2

CHAPTER 2

Bennett St. James

Soph: You deserve to be there. You're going to do great! Can't celebrate with you when you get the job!

I smile down at the text from Sophie as I wait outside the Director of Athletics' office. She's the most encouraging person I know. Ever since we were kids she's been cheering me on and pushing me to be better. Whether I was making signs to hold up during my swim meets—much to the disapproval of the other attendees—or opening my Harvard acceptance letter because I was too nervous, she's always been there for me.

I've tried to do the same for her as much as I can, but when I got into Harvard I left Georgia for eight years. I visited some, but most of my time was over the phone. Now I make sure I'm at every important event I can for her because I missed too much being gone. This career change will help free me up even more since I'll be in private practice instead of being on call to the hospital's whim. Sighing, I shift in my seat.

My hope is that having more time will allow me to have a life outside of my career for once. I've never wanted much besides becoming a surgeon. In high school, I dated because my friends pressured me, but I made s

girls knew I didn't promise much more than one or two dates. Her blasted nickname Sophie mentioned earlier. I *hate* that nickname. It seems like some kind of a heartbreaker.

In reality, I was sort of a nerd in school. I got sucked into the jock group because of my wealthy last name and spot on the swim team. Otherwise, I'd probably be one of those guys who ate lunch in the library while studying color-coded flashcards. Now that I'm older, I see the value of having something outside of my career. I also saw Sophie in a new light the first time.

Sophie has dated on and off throughout the years but coming back to see her on Michael's arm set something off inside of me. Something that made me want more for her and for me, a life together as more than just a doctor. The life I'm imagining is one where I spend all my time off with her, once we go on dates, or even just snuggling on my couch. Her head on my shoulder, her hand sifting through her lavender hair—

“Dr. St. James?” I spring to my feet, jumping out of my daydream. I was almost hit the secretary who has come to retrieve me. She takes a step back, her eyes wide. I'm about to apologize, but she speaks up again. “Mr. Sanders, you're ready for you.” She turns on her heel and click-clacks away from me in support. I brush my hands over my pants and take a deep breath. Just a changing interview, no big deal. I focus on Sophie's words of encouragement from earlier and the ones in her text as I walk in. It helps bring a smile to my slaveface.

“Mr. Sanders, it's nice to finally meet you in person,” I greet when I step inside of the large, sleek office. There's a massive black desk in the center of the room and sitting behind it is an older man with a receding hairline. I stare at the

ice that jovial expression. He pushes to standing and his larger belly comes into view. "If you gave him a white beard he'd make a great Santa Claus."

"Bennett St. James! I've heard great things about you. It's nice to meet you, son. Please, call me Paul," he booms before grabbing my hand in a firm handshake.

"I'm excited to be here. Though it isn't my alma mater, I'm a Thrasher at heart and love this campus." I sit down in a suede chair in front of his desk. He plops back down in his seat.

"It is beautiful, isn't it? And I know you've got Thrasher blood in your veins! Your dad is a great friend of mine." I try not to let my smile fade at these words. I love my family, but I want to stand on my own two feet. Sophie's words come back to mind again, and I hold back a sigh. I know Sophie worked hard to get to this point but knowing that I could get this job because of my last name isn't an easy pill to swallow.

Sophie especially understands that desire. She comes from wealth and threw it all away to follow her own dreams. Now she's made her way back, name, and here I am using my father's to climb the ladder.

"That's nice to hear, Paul. But I'd really love it if we could leave my name out of this interview. I want to be sure that I'm here according to my own merit." Sanders explains and he gives me a nod. He leans back in his chair and props his feet up on his stomach. His jovial look is gone now as he assesses me.

"I appreciate that sentiment. Most boys with your kind of connections would come in here expecting an easy in. I want you to know that when I walk your dad did put your name in the hat, that's not why you made it here."

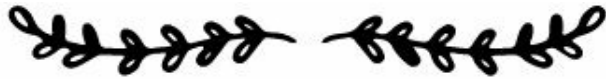
I raise my eyebrows. "It isn't?"

"Of course not! There are careers at stake here—sometimes even lives. I can't be putting some unqualified trust fund baby on my staff just because of his name."

o view. his daddy plays golf with me on occasion.” I breathe a quiet sigh of relief at his words. “Now, let’s talk about your experience.”

to meet

in a firm



Georgia “Thank you for your time, sir,” I say with a smile that Paul matches. In front of me, he hands me the paperwork to sign. *That free time with Sophie is more like a real possibility.* The thought makes me pause. Sophie being in your first thought isn’t new, but it feels different now that my feelings for her falter at the thought of shifted into something more than friendship.

to feet. “Of course, son. I look forward to having you on staff. But there’s one more test I have to put you through,” he says with a low voice. We’ve spent over an hour going over my education and experience, plus my personal and future goals. I thought I’d been put through the wringer enough. So, completing surgery in front of him, I’m not sure what more the matter I want from me.

“Okay,” I say, not hiding the skepticism in my voice.

My father Paul chuckles and pushes himself up again. “I’m sure you’ll do great merit,” I last thing on our agenda is to go see Coach Bash.” I stand up quickly, but resist the urge to wipe my damp palms on my khakis again.

Sebastian Holt—aka Coach Bash—is one of the most revered connections coaches and former players of this generation. He played for the Thriller then went pro, but retired because of an injury at the height of his career. After that, he quickly worked up the coaching ranks until he got offered a head coaching job here at Georgia State College. In his first year he took his team to the playoffs. His second they won the championship, and he’s never lost a game since. He’s a powerhouse.

relief at “Coach Bash cares about the players a lot, so he likes to know all the medical staff personally. Since your position is so critical, I want to make sure he thinks you’re a good fit. I also trust his judgment over anyone else, not even my wife,” he jokes and nudges me with his elbow as he walks past.

I follow him out the door and focus on my posture so I don’t look nervous. He’s all right. While I’m a reasonably confident guy, it’s hard not to be nervous going to meet Sebastian Holt. I don’t know much about him, just that he’s your young head coach with such a lengthy winning record—younger than forty. And I’ve heard he was ruthless on the field in his position as a safety.

“You’ll meet all the coaches for the rest of the sports after you’re hired. I like to get Sebastian’s approval before hiring you.”

It doesn’t take long to reach Coach Bash’s office. Even his personal life is imposing, with his name in bold, brass letters across it. His secretary is short of us as we approach, and the door swings open with no one to open it. I could swallow and follow Paul inside. The door swings shut behind us. It must be some sort of electric closing mechanism.

“Hey Bash, got some fresh meat for ya!” Paul chortles and slaps me on the back. The man stands up behind his desk, looking me over. He’s tall and bulky, but it’s how broad he is that’s disconcerting. Since I was a swimmer in high school, I’m more lean than bulky. But Sebastian is *built*. Retirement in football didn’t lessen his muscle mass that’s for sure. It makes him an intimidating experience, especially when paired with his piercing gaze and career.

“It’s an honor to meet you, Coach, I’m a big fan. My name’s Ben,” I say and hold out my hand over his desk. For a moment I think he’s not going to take it, and I start to pull back. But a smile takes over his face and he pulls my arm into a half-hug, patting me on the back firmly.

“You should have seen your face, man,” he laughs by my ear.

l of the pulling back. He gestures for us to sit down. “Paul, did you tell him be sure stories about me before you came? He looked like a deer in headlights. Maybe sits down across from us and kicks his shoes up on the desk.

st. “I’m sure your reputation preceded you enough to get him shaking a little,” Paul says with a smile. I feel more at ease already, and going to this means we’ll have a good working relationship.

ing for a “I’m no big deal, and certainly nothing to be afraid of. As long as you and that care of my players, that is,” Sebastian says and shoots me a pointed look.

when I nod enthusiastically, his face transforms into a laid-back smile. “I’ll agree to disagree about you being ‘no big deal,’” I say, earning a laugh from both the men. “And I’ll certainly do all that’s in my power to make sure your players are taken care of.”

nods at “Then we’ll be good friends,” Sebastian replies. My eyes land on a framed photo behind his desk. There’s a young girl in the photo, about ten or eleven if I had to guess, standing with her hands on her hips and a big smile on her face. Maybe I can earn brownie points by mentioning it.

on the “You have a beautiful daughter,” I say and gesture to the picture. “Familiar than she?” Paul clears his throat and shifts in his seat in my peripheral.

amer in “Thank you,” Sebastian replies. He directs a fond smile over his shoulder from the photo. “She’s going to be eleven this summer. Her first year of kindergarten is coming up.”

. “You and your wife must be so proud,” I say and Sebastian looks down at me. “I’m a second then back up with an expression I can’t decipher. Paul is shifting in his seat and when I glance over he has wide eyes. I yank Sebastian’s hands and notice no ring—not even a tan line of one. My stomach drops.

before “Actually,” he clears his throat. “I’m not married. Madeline is my

horror who I adopted after my sister died.” I go still in my seat. I don’t think
its.” He have messed that up more if I tried. Maybe I won’t get to tell Sophie
news after all.

g in his “I’m so sorry, sir. I shouldn’t have assumed—” He cuts me off with
I hope of his hand.

“It’s not a big deal. Many people have made the mistake. Don
ou takes sweating over it.” He lets out a light laugh. “You’re still going to get
ok. But I knew I liked you the moment we shook hands. And my instincts are
again. right, aren’t they, Paul?” Paul sits up in his chair and nods, the
rning adissipating from his face.

ower to “Always, Coach Bash. That’s why we hired you.”

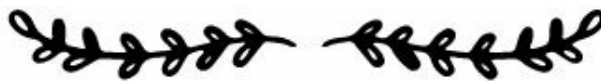
“Well, then, I guess this is congratulations, Bennett,” Sebastian say
pictureshoot up out of my chair.

eleven “Thank you! Both of you,” I say to them. This is so big. Not just
on her career, but for my whole future. Now there’s nothing standing b
Sophie and me being together.

low old *Except a broken heart.* I brush away the pesky thought. Everyt
going to work out. It has to.

houlder

middle



own for The smell of garlic and basil fills my apartment, and I know before I’
l keeps in the door that Sophie is already here. A long time ago we exchange
peek at but I use the key to her townhouse less since she shares it with the oth
tomach Sophie, however, uses my key often. To both my benefit and det

Sometimes she’ll do sweet things like she is now and make me din
y niece,

I could sometimes she sneaks in here and pranks me. I never know which it's good to be. It keeps life interesting, that's for sure.

I hang my keys on the hook and kick off my dress shoes beside Sophie's a wavebeat-up converse. My shoes have sat beside Sophie's a million times. A few months ago it started to feel different. This new feeling happens. It starts my stomach. It's like something has come to life and I feel almost like I want the job. Butterflies is what some might call the feeling. It struck me always the first time it happened, but I've gotten almost used to it lately.

I follow the delicious scent into my kitchen and stop dead in my tracks. Sophie is gently kneading dough on my kitchen island, flour everywhere, wearing my sweatshirt. Those awful butterflies have migrated up to my throat. It's like my future is right in front of me, ready for me to reach out and grab it, but I can't.

She hums softly as her hands work the dough with expert knowledge. Between she feels me staring, her head lifts.

"Bennett! You scared me," she laughs, but I'm still caught up in the moment. Caught up in documenting this memory in my brain to hold onto forever. Caught up in imagining what it would be like if just a few key details were different. Details like a ring on her finger. Her last name matching mine. "Ben? Are you okay? Oh!" She looks down at my sweatshirt. "Are you sure about the sweatshirt? I got cold and didn't want to go down to my car to get a fully sweater. I promise I'll wash it."

I snap out of my reverie. It's ridiculous to think about marrying a girl like her. We haven't even been on a date. But the thing is—I already love Sophie. I've loved her since we were kids. Now I'm just falling *in* love with her.

"No, Soph, I was just lost in thought." I paste on a smile. "Don't worry about the sweatshirt. You can have it if you want," I say without thinking.

she's surprised by my offer, she doesn't show it. She's borrowed my
before, but never kept them. That always felt over the line for us.

Sophie's "Were you thinking about your new job? I can't believe it! My best
s, but at the new orthopedic surgeon for Georgia State College. I'm so proud o
deep in She smiles big, her gray eyes crinkling up at the edges.

ck with "Thanks, Soph. I'm really excited about it. It's hard to believe. The
s weird director even told me point blank it had nothing to do with my dad."

She gives me an *I told you so* look. "You got the job because you
tracks. best surgeon on this side of the Mississippi, and probably the other s
here ... You've worked hard, now it's time to celebrate!"

to my "I don't know about the best surgeon in the country," I laugh. "But
out and to celebrate. Is this homemade pizza?" Tomato sauce simmers on the

and a series of top-notch ingredients are spread across the countertop.
e. As if doesn't do anything halfway, especially not celebrations. So pizza

from scratch sauce and dough, plus all the toppings anyone could ever
in the "Of course, I know how much you love it." She shoots me a k
ld on to smile and those darn butterflies are back again.

r details *I love you*, I think, knowing those three little words are starting t
g mine. more. Sophie's brows come together, but her smile is still on her face.

ou mad "I love you too, Bennett. You don't normally say that so casual
to get asays, curiosity coating her voice. *Did I say that out loud?* If time tra
real, I'd go back and take those words out of my mouth.

Sophie. "It's a big day," I say, and try to laugh it off. I usually reserve the
ie. I've for important moments, or when I know Sophie needs to hear it m
never blurt it out randomly like that.

t worry I've got to get it together.

king. If

clothes

friend-
if you!”

athletic

i’re the
ide too.

I am up
e stove,
Sophie
means
want.
nowing

o mean

y,” she
vel was

phrase
ost. I’d

CHAPTER 3

CHAPTER 3

Sophie Cunningham

“I’ll see you tomorrow, Hayden! Thanks for all your help today,” I say to the sous chef as I step out of my Airstream trailer. Running my food truck, To-Truck—has been a dream come true, and Hayden has helped the success of that dream significantly. He’s worked with me for a while now and is one of the best when it comes to efficiency and technical skills. He also works as a security guard with all his tattoos and large muscles. I don’t think I would try to rob me with him at the window.

“See you tomorrow,” he says in his usual gruff tone. He’s not the most talkative man, but he gets the job done. He swings a leg over his motorcycle while I close the door to the trailer. The engine revs to life and he’s surrounded by a cloud of dust. Silence settles around me, making my nerves come to the surface of my stomach.

The park where I set up is empty now that it’s past nine o’clock, so the only thing to keep me company are the small animals scurrying around and the wind in the trees. I am, unfortunately, what one would call a scarecrow. I had a true crime obsession when I was younger—still do, actually—and

serial killer knowledge has me on edge every time I'm alone. What course, is a lot since I'm in the food industry.

The overhang creaks as I pull down to shut it. I tuck my keys in between my fingers—knowing deep down that if someone wanted to kidnap me now my car keys wouldn't be enough to stop them—and start the short drive where my pickup is parked.

With each crunch of the fallen leaves underfoot, I have to force myself not to whip my head around to see if anyone is behind me. I still keep checking five times before I make it to the parking lot. There's a silver pickup parked a few spots down from me, making me gulp. Who would be stupid enough to park at this hour? There are parks in town with better views to park a pickup—Farm-vehicle in after dark than this one. My mind automatically goes to worst case scenario: serial killer. *Maybe it's a couple on a date*, I think to myself in the best panicked mind. *Or maybe they're on the phone and didn't want to double the road while talking*. I almost start to feel better when that invasive thought comes again: *Or a serial killer*.

With shaking hands, I open my faded red truck door and climb in like a mouse. I think I hear the sound of gravel crunching, so I quickly slam the door and lock it behind me. I whip my head around to make sure no one is off in a hiding in the backseat, and once deemed all clear I scramble to turn the key to start the truck.

Once my lights are on, I feel safer, and I sigh in relief as I back out of the lot, so they turn toward the courtyard where my trailer is parked. My headlights illuminate the trees and park fountain and...

ly cat. I “AHHHH!” I scream as a figure stands motionless in the bright light. I can't make out any details, and I don't want to. I'll abandon my trailer if necessary. At this point, I don't care. The person starts walking toward my pickup and m

lich, she launches into my throat. I'm frozen, wondering how much time I would have.

I ran over an innocent bystander because they scared me.

Between As the perpetrator gets closer, the startling idea of being kidnapped rightaway and a different kind of dread settles into my bones. Waltzing up the street to the beat-up truck is none other than Whitney Cunningham—my mother.

I roll my window down halfway and meet her glaring blue eyes. They're fiercer than the wind blowing through the city right now.

She ends up "Sophie Amelia Cunningham, what on earth are you doing? Don't peek at me, I intend on running me over? Your own mother," she scolds. Other people might be joking, but she is not. I briefly consider telling her I was glad she ran her over but think better of it on account of enjoying being in the first case the living.

I shake my head. "It's nice to see you too, Mom," I say, sarcasm lacing my words. Her lips curve into a narrow smile.

I thought "Do *not* get a tone with me, young lady. I've been trying to get in touch with you, but you won't return my calls. So I had to track you down to the awful park." She scrunches her nose in distaste. "Using your food truck for the door schedule." She says *food truck* like it's a disease rather than a business. "I've been busy, Mom. And it's not like I haven't responded. I see you on the messages."

"Text messages are no way to communicate with your mother. Not out of this monstrous vehicle so we can talk."

She glances at me. "Why don't you just get inside? It's warm in here," I say and she curls her lip up. Her 'disgusted' facial expressions could win an award for dramatic.

I stare at this. "My Mercedes is quite warm, thank you. I'd prefer to speak there if you won't come home." *Home* is two blocks away, where my best friend

ld do ifgearing up for a movie night that I'm probably going to miss now. F
not a place where a piece of furniture costs more than my current tow
d fadesand I have to constantly walk on eggshells.

o to my I sigh. "Okay, fine, let me park again," I relent. Satisfied, she step
r. I rollAfter I park, I walk over to the silver car that my mother is cu
: colderoccupying. I slide in and the smell of leather and Chanel No. 9 clo
enclosed space, bringing back unpleasant memories of silent car ric
did youdisappointed glares. *Ah, childhood.*

' moms "I need to get my Airstream out of the park before it gets too late."
going to "This won't take long." She gives me a tight smile. "But if it did, i
land ofbe your fault since you refused to speak with me about this at an ideal
drove all the way from Savannah just to see you." I'd feel bad—if I
er eyesknow this was a lie. My mother has business in Atlanta often, and I'm
she did today but wants to manipulate me into thinking otherwise.

n touch "What do you need to talk about, Mom?" I try to get our conversati
to thison track. If I gave her enough opportunity, she'd use up the rest of m
d truckgoing on a rant about how I'm throwing my life away.

. "As I'm sure you know, the annual Charity Extravaganza is approa
ent textshe begins and I nod. "I would like for you to attend this year, as you
since you were in high school. Your sister will be in Europe for worl
ow, getwill have no family with me if you don't attend. My being alone woul
shame to our family name."

urls her I resist the urge to roll my eyes. This is why I ran away from Sa
or mostright out of high school. Southern high society irritates me to no end.

"I can't take off that many weekends, Mom. I'm sorry," I say and
:. Sincemy stomach as I brace for the backlash. Beyond not wanting to go, it i
nds arethe truth that I shouldn't negate that many Saturdays. The

home is Extravaganza is a series of events, during which all the southern sc
housegather together for extravagant balls, afternoon tea parties, and
auctions to raise money for their prospective charities. And of cour
s back.show how amazing they are at hosting. I feel a stress headache con
urrentlyjust thinking about it.

uds the “Perhaps you would reconsider if I told you that several food i
les andinvestors would be there.”

I look down at my hands in my lap to avoid her knowing gaze.
dream to open up another food truck. To turn Farm-To-Truck
t wouldfranchise. I stupidly mentioned that to my sister while at a family dinn
time. Imy mom must have been listening.

I didn’t “That’s tempting, but I can find my own investors,” I say, though
certainthat’s not completely true. Business is great, but I’m in my twentie
don’t possess that traditional look that makes investors want to ope
on backwallets. At least not so far. Most old southern men aren’t fond of my
y nighthair and affection for the color black.

“I was also considering hiring you as the caterer for my event,” s
ching,”casually, as if that’s not a career-changing gig. My food would get i
haven’tmouths of people with more influence in their pinky fingers than I’ll p
κ, and Iever have.

ld bring “What’s the catch?” I ask and meet her icy gaze head-on. She
looking like the cat who ate the canary.

vannah “No catch, darling. I simply want you to attend three balls and two
events. My ball is the last weekend of February and you’ll be able t
clenchthat one so long as you attend the rest.”

s really I relax slightly into the warm seat. That’s not so bad. “That
Charitymanageable.”

socialites “Of course it is! Just a few parties, is all. You’ll need a date of course, but that’s no problem since you have Michael,” she says and I tense up.

course, to “Actually, Michael and I broke up.”

going on “Is that so?” She doesn’t sound the least bit surprised. “Well, I can help you match you up with someone if you can’t find a suitable date of your own.

industry “You want to be my *matchmaker*?” I ask, a bitter taste filling my mouth at the thought.

It’s my “While I would enjoy that very much, it’s not necessary. So long as you can find a man with a good family background to bring you to each event,

and My stomach twists at the thought of spending my weekends with a man your mother has picked out. This might help me achieve my dreams, though I know

I sigh. “I’ll do it but let me try to find a guy on my own before you suggest anything.” Maybe I can find an old high school friend whose southern girlfriend hasn’t married him off yet. Chances are he’d be forced into the

purple anyways, and I’d rather know the guy I’m dating than not.

“Splendid! I knew you’d say yes. This will help us both, and maybe you’ll even end up with a good husband by the end of it.” Her smile is wide and she knows she’s won.

Probably “I wouldn’t get your hopes up,” I say and push open the car door. “I’ll see you at the first event.”

smiles, “I’ll certainly see you before then, for the dress fittings of course,” she says as I get out. Feeling defeated, I just nod. I’ll gather the energy to argue about smaller dresses later.

to cater “Bye, Mom, I love you.” I shut the door. Her driver-side window goes dark as I walk back to my truck.

sounds “Don’t forget to answer your phone!” she yells before backing up and speeding away, leaving me alone once more.

rise, but I close my eyes, take a deep breath, then go back to what I was
before she showed up in my headlights: going home.

always

vn.”

mouth at “I’m home!” I yell after I shut the front door.

“In the living room,” MJ calls out, though I already knew they’d be
as you kick off my converse then walk into the dimly lit room.

ent.” “You won’t believe what just happened—” I gasp. “Lottie!” My blor

nan my friend giggles at my exclamation from under a blanket on the couch.

l... her into a hug, laughing at her surprised noise.

arrange “Don’t crush her,” Grace says from where she’s sitting in her recline

1 mama “I can’t believe you’re here! When did you get back from

events honeymoon?” I pull back, then mash myself between her and MJ

couch. MJ grumbles something about *personal space* then scoots awa

e you’ll me.

and she “Yesterday! I just missed y’all so much I had to come over.” Lo

married on Christmas Eve and left right away for a cozy cabin honeyr

‘I’ll see the mountains. She’s been gone for two weeks now.

“Where’s Callum?”

he says “He’s at home. I was actually about to leave because I can’t stay

e about She pouts, but her blue eyes are bright and happy. “I need to help u

But before I go, what were you about to say when you came in? I

w rolls know!”

I laugh and shake my head at her. “My mom came to the park whe

out and finished working,” I say and her eyes get big. All of my friends kno

bad my relationship with my mom is.

s doing “I’m guessing that went well,” Grace says and I paste on an exaggerated smile.

“It went amazing!” My saccharine tone makes them all laugh. “Some day she’d get me in front of the investors of my dreams if I went to a number of charity events.”

“No offense, Soph, but that doesn’t sound that bad.” Lottie is always there. I try to put a spin on things, but I don’t know if this situation has a positive.

“She also wants to set me up with someone. I have to have a date idea that’s *respectable family* or no deal.” Sympathetic looks come from each of the girls, even MJ. They all know how little I want to do with men right

Especially the kinds my mother would set me up with. They’d never. Michael, only worse.

“What are you going to do?” Lottie asks and I shrug.

“I’m going to try to find a guy I don’t hate being around, I guess. Investors are my only chance at expanding Farm-To-Truck in the future.”

“Maybe it won’t be so bad,” Lottie says, ever the ray of sunshine in a dark group. I usually ride the optimism train with her, but not tonight.

“You could end up finding a guy you like.”

“Doubtful.”

“Not long.”

“I’ll unpack.

“I have to

“When I was

“I know how

“I’m guessing that went well,” Grace says and I paste on an exaggerated smile.

“It went amazing!” My saccharine tone makes them all laugh. “She told me she’d get me in front of the investors of my dreams if I went to a certain number of charity events.”

“No offense, Soph, but that doesn’t sound that bad.” Lottie is always trying to put a spin on things, but I don’t know if this situation has a positive.

“She also wants to set me up with someone. I have to have a date from a *respectable family* or no deal.” Sympathetic looks come from each of the girls, even MJ. They all know how little I want to do with men right now. Especially the kinds my mother would set me up with. They’d be like Michael, only worse.

“What are you going to do?” Lottie asks and I shrug.

“I’m going to try to find a guy I don’t hate being around, I guess. These investors are my only chance at expanding Farm-To-Truck in the near future.”

“Maybe it won’t be so bad,” Lottie says, ever the ray of sunshine in our group. I usually ride the optimism train with her, but not tonight. “Who knows? You could end up finding a guy you like.”

“Doubtful.”

CHAPTER 4

CHAPTER 4

Bennett St. James

My apartment building looks like a five-star resort by the time I pull into the parking lot after work. I've been working with the athletic department for barely two weeks, and I'm already worn out. Dealing with angry coaches and their prized—as well as injured—athletes is no joke. They come in with demands that they think I should say, but when I'm more human than puppet they're quick to flip the exam table.

I lift one hand off the wheel and rub the back of my neck, trying to ease the tension that's been building since my meeting with the baseball coach. The star pitcher needs Tommy John surgery—a procedure that replaces a tendon in the elbow—and will be out for at least a year in recovery afterward. Not to say, the coach and player were livid. But I can only do so much.

After parking in my designated spot, I sigh and grab the gray bag that I've carried since my intern days. It's starting to show its years, but I can't part with it. Even though I come from a wealthy family, I've always been taught to use a product until it falls apart. It's more to do with the sentimentality than not wanting to spend the money, though. I could get a new bag, but it wouldn't have the blue stain in the bottom where my pen bur

and ruined my scrubs on my first day. Something about it keeps me h
think.

The January air is harsh on my skin when I exit my car, even w
black beanie pulled down low and my puffer jacket zipped up tight. I
beeline toward the entrance of the building, but a flash of pale red
peripheral makes me pause. Looking over my shoulder, I see Sophie
parked in a visitor's space.

Whenever Sophie doesn't tell me she's coming to visit, there's *at*
sixty percent chance she's going to prank me. And that's underesti

She didn't try to hide her truck this time though, so maybe I'll be sa
into theher antics. Visible truck or not, anticipation heightens as I make my
ient forthe elevator and then watch it rise to my floor.

hes and Sophie never does anything so dramatic that it would harm me, but
th whatof the unknown is real when it comes to her. Will I open my door
e readyentire living room covered in cling wrap? Or my bedroom furniture s

out for my living room furniture? It's the kind of thing that will keep
ase theguessing. And yet, I don't hate the feeling. I'm heading towards
ch. Hiscertain doom, but knowing that at the end of it all, I'll hear her g
ndon inuncontrollably has me smiling already.

eedless My key turns in the lock until it clicks softly, and I slowly open th

Silence fills the apartment. Sophie is not usually synonymous with sile
ckpack "Soph?" I call out as I step inside. The door falls shut, and still not

I can'tfrom Sophie. I keep walking until my foot hits something plastic
een onescatters across my hardwood floor. A few feet ahead is a neon gre
al valueorange Nerf gun with a white piece of paper taped to it. I snag it
ckpack,ground.

st open *Ben, I decided we both need to blow off some steam.* I laugh at the

umble, I that statement but wonder where her stress is coming from at the m

And what better way than a war and a wager? If you shoot me first, I' with my If I shoot you first, you'll order takeout. If you agree, say 'I agree'. Aft make ayou'll have ten seconds to find cover.

l in my My face breaks out into a smile. I remember getting Nerf g
's truck Christmas and chasing Sophie around my mother's garden. She foun
darts in her rose bushes for *weeks* after.

least a I look around after reading the paper, but I don't spot Sophie anyw
mating. plain sight. I load the gun and yell out, "I agree!" Not wasting any tim
fe from behind my kitchen island. A spray of foam darts follows me. "There's
way to that was ten seconds!" I shout while trying to formulate a plan. It
she's across the room based on how the darts followed me.

the fear "Time is an illusion!" she shouts back and I snort.

to the "Have you been watching those conspiracy theory Tiktoks ag
wapped slowly rise to my knees then onto the balls of my feet to peek o
a man kitchen island.

almost "It's not a conspiracy, it's just a theory! All theories are unprove
jiggling responds like it's obvious. Her lavender-colored bun sticks out righ
the back of my couch.

ie door. I grin, aim, pull the trigger, and...miss. The dart hits the top of my
nce. and bounces to the floor. Sophie's squeal echoes throughout the h
a sound spray the whole couch with darts, but her head disappears too quickly.

and it "Stop trying to distract me!" she yells and then I hear movement. I j
en and standing as she's speeding toward my bedroom. I run in after her, s
off the and barely missing her shoulder. She flips around, holding out her gun
poised on the trigger. I match her stance and stay frozen in place.

truth of "It seems as though we are at an impasse," I say, trying to hold a

moment. face.

ll cook. “It does seem that way.” Her lips twitch, almost breaking my resolve.
er that, “How can we resolve this conundrum?”

“How about a shootout? Turn around, count to three, first to shoot wins.”
“Is time real or an illusion in this scenario?” I raise an eyebrow and a
id foamsmile breaks free. Her gray eyes are wide with excitement and I can
but let my smile loose as well. Everything with Sophie feels lighter.

here in “For the sake of the war, it’s real.”

ie, I run “So we’ll turn around then?”

no way She nods in response and begins to turn. We watch the other o
’s clear shoulders to make sure each of us turns. Then we face the opposite di
“You count,” she says and I nod, though she can’t see me.

I position my feet to be able to turn easily. “One.” I hold my gun o
ain?” My body, ready to shoot. “Two.” I take a deep breath. “Three!” I spin
ver the heel and press the trigger—no darts leave the gun. A bright orange fo
hits me right in the forehead, then the sound of Sophie’s giggles f
n,” she roars.

t above Clutching my head, I groan dramatically and spin several times unt
onto my bed. All the while Sophie laughs hysterically.

/ couch “You’re such a drama queen.” She falls back on the bed beside m
ouse. Arms touching. Warmth fills me even as the heat of our battle subsides
probably means nothing to her, but each simple touch feels charged
jump to energy to me. I close my eyes and try to shake off the feeling.

hooting “Says the woman who snuck into my apartment to have a Nerf
, fingerpoint out. She huffs out a laugh, but it sounds less than joyful.

“We needed to relieve some stress. Plus, all my free time is about
serious gone for the next month and a half.”

I sit up on the bed and look down at her with a frown. “What are you talking about?”

She sighs and sits up as well, crossing her legs underneath herself. “My mom came to visit the other day.” She grimaces. “She told me she’s going to be alone during her Charity Extravaganza and needs someone there who can’t help to *bring honor to the family name*.” Her gray eyes roll.

“And you said yes?” I ask, surprised. She picks fuzz off her socks which are decorated with hedgehogs, which makes me smile even in my confusion.

“Well, she told me she could get me in with investors if I did. I have four to three balls, and two minor events before *her* ball at the end of February. I do that, then she’ll let me cater her event, which would be huge.”

“That’s not so bad, I—” I’m about to offer to keep her company when she cuts me off with a bitter laugh.

“It wouldn’t be, except I have to have a date, from a *good* background at each event. If I can’t find one, she’ll set me up with a date. Right now I have to find some southern society guy willing to attend a few events as a stand-in boyfriend.”

“That’s crazy! You can’t do that,” I blurt out, making her raise her eyebrows.

“I know it’s crazy, but I don’t have any other choice. I don’t want to date anyone. Especially not some golf-loving former frat boy who shivers as if the very thought is repulsive. A small amount of respect was awarded to me from the fact that she probably wouldn’t actually like the men her mother approves of. But I still don’t want her spending a lot of time with a well-dressed man right around Valentine’s Day.

You could be her fake boyfriend. The thought springs up unbidden. I might be asking for disaster. I want our future relationship to be real.

are you want her to think of me in an artificial light. At the same time, this could
her see me differently. Maybe the fake boyfriend version of me could
lf. “My her want the real boyfriend version of me.

going to “I’ll do it,” I say before I can talk myself out of it.

with her She furrows her brows together. “What?”

“I’ll be your fake boyfriend.” Anticipation fills my veins and I cle
that are toes in my tennis shoes to keep from bouncing my leg. She’d instantly
on. was nervous. It’s one of my tells.

re to go She laughs. “Don’t be ridiculous, Ben. You’re my best friend. I
uary. If dating you.”

Okay, *ouch*.

hen she “It wouldn’t be real, Soph. I’d be your *fake* boyfriend. But that
letting me know that I’m not dating material,” I say and force a laugh.

family Her eyes soften. “Ben, no, that’s not it,” she says with a small smile.
one. So knew you meant fake, and that’s why I feel like I need to say no.” She
events and my hopes soar up to the sun. *Is she—could she be about to admit s*

me? “It would be too weird to try and change our friendship dynamic.
ise her we’d be too awkward together to look real.” And like Icarus, my hope
crashing down.

want to “Soph, come on.” I let out a nervous laugh. “Are you really going
y.” She miserable with a stranger when you could just be a little awkward with
relief is best friend?”

any of She shrugs, looking unsure. “That’s a good point, but I don’t know.
a bunch trails off, biting her lip. “My mom doesn’t like you. Maybe it was
pushing her buttons too much to bring you as my date.”

iden. It I resist the urge to groan. She’s right. Whitney hates me. All because
I don’t always have and always will encourage Sophie to do what’s right

ould help instead of being Whitney's puppet.

ould make "But she loves my last name," I say, and smile as my best point comes to mind. "She knows how many connections my family has and would never say no to us dating. She'd have to be happy, even if it was fake."

She shakes her head. "Maybe in public, but when it's just us she's so much more furious that I'm dating you. She still blames you for my hair," she says. I know I give her a teasing look.

"I had nothing to do with that! It was your choice." I laugh.

I'm not "Yes, but all she saw was the green dye on your hands. From then on she hated when we spent time together but couldn't put a stop to it because of your parents' connections."

Thanks for I still remember that day in seventh grade when we got green box dye at school and did her hair in the bathroom sink. It was right after her dad died. "I was away, and she wanted to control something, *anything* in her life," I pauses mentioned coloring her hair and I—being a middle school boy—though I *he likes* no big deal and that she should do it to be happy. So we told her dad I think needed something from the drugstore.

As come Green was the only bright color in stock that day, so that's what we

Then we hopped back in the town car and it took us to her house where she had to be listed me to help dye her hair. I ended up with hulk-green hands and she had with poorly done, sickly green hair. Whitney's face when she saw Sophie was the kind of anger a kid doesn't forget.

..” She She was beyond seething, but she didn't say a word to me. She grabbed my hands and asked me to go home so she could talk to Sophie. Sophie was grounded for three months and her hair was back to honey blonde after she came to the salon the next week. I still have a picture saved on an old thumb drive for her with her smiling sitting on the edge of the bathtub with wet neon green

“You’re forgetting that she couldn’t ever, and still can’t, be mean to me. And she knows I don’t like how she treats you, so there’s a good reason she’s nice to you so that I’ll use my connections for her benefit.”

Sophie tilts her head to the side, thinking. I can only hope she says she’ll be willing to help her, and it would help me show her who I am in a different way. Who I *could be* to her. This might be my way around the man ban.

“Let’s say I say yes,” she starts, and I resist the urge to grin. I can’t be too eager. “This is going to change everything for the next month. I know our families will interrogate us and expect us to go to more than just a few events together.”

“It’s not like we don’t go to each other’s family occasions anyway,” I point out. “This time we might just have to hold hands during it.” My stomach burned at the statement.

She questions as if we haven’t hugged a million times. “Hold hands?” She questions as if we haven’t hugged a million times. “It wasn’t just laying side by side.”

“Yeah, Soph. As your boyfriend, I probably should hold your hand,” she says, and she scrunches her nose.

“Fake boyfriend, but I guess you’re right. It just feels weird to think about that. Even weirder that we’re planning it out in this way. It won’t make us friends as friends, right?”

“Do you really think our friendship can’t handle a little hand-holding?”

Answering her question with a question is the only way I know how to answer her truthfully. Because the truth is, I hope it messes with our friendship. That it flips it upside down and we can have something bigger. It feels ridiculous to think that way after so long of ignoring my romantic feelings toward her, but it’s how I feel now.

She smiles and seems to relax a little. “Of course it can. We can

to me anything.”

chance “Meaning?” My toes are clenched so tight in my shoes that I’m sure they’ll start to cramp.

yes. It “Meaning ... I want to do it. Let’s fake date.”

at light. I’m finally able to relax, my muscles releasing the tension. This is a chance at winning over my best friend’s heart.

it look Time to be the fake boyfriend to end all fake—and real—boyfriends.

Both of

just the

says,” I

cheeks

nes and

” I grin

k about

ss with

lding?”

o avoid

ith our

ger and

ng any

handle

anything.”

“Meaning?” My toes are clenched so tight in my shoes that I’m worried they’ll start to cramp.

“Meaning ... I want to do it. Let’s fake date.”

I’m finally able to relax, my muscles releasing the tension. This is it. My chance at winning over my best friend’s heart.

Time to be the fake boyfriend to end all fake—and real—boyfriends.

CHAPTER 5

CHAPTER 5

Sophie Cunningham

“Have you lost it?” Grace whisper-yells, looking at me with wide green eyes. She’d raise her voice if we weren’t in a dress shop currently. We’re walking through the sale racks for gowns to wear to the first ball. I’m hoping I find one that looks nice enough I won’t have to wear what my mother picks.

“It’s not that big of a deal,” I say, though I’m beginning to second-guess that statement. Fake dating my best friend felt logical a few nights ago, but saying it out loud makes it sound ridiculous. Grace is the first person I’m telling because I’m afraid of MJ’s honesty and not ready for his over-enthusiasm. She’d think this was one of her romance movies come to life. I thought Grace would be a balance between the two, but now I’m not so sure.

“It’s a huge deal, Soph. You can’t fake date Bennett. So many things can go wrong.” Worry rises in me at her words, but I push it down. It’s better to feel like my worries are an overflowing suitcase and I’m sitting on top of it trying to keep it from flying open.

“Bennett and I can handle this,” I reassure her—and myself—as I look at a long black gown. I can’t tell if it’s cute or made of old curtains. Signaling Grace to move it aside to look at another dress. This is the third store I’ve been

week. I don't want to spend a ton of money because I'll need four different gowns. Heaven forbid someone repeats an outfit.

"Pretending to be his girlfriend is asking for heartbreak." Grace pulls a different black gown out from the rack across from me. "What do you think about this one?"

"I'll try it on," I say and take it from her. "Why would I get heartbroken over something fake?" The gown is heavy in the crook of my arm and that I'll probably only be able to hold one or two more before heading to the dressing room.

"Because you're going to end up wishing it was real. It's the classic dating dilemma."

Looking at Grace, I say, "Grace, that's ridiculous. I don't feel that way about Bennett." Anytime I find a dress I like, I pull down a royal blue dress. I wouldn't usually choose the color, but it's better than anything my mother would choose. And I'm getting desperate considering the first ball is in two days. I told my mom I already had a dress a few days ago but she said I dodged all her questions so that I don't have to show it to her. I've already bought several gowns in my size, *just in case*.

Lottie's face shows she's not buying. She sighs. "As much as I've told Lottie not to meddle, I'm about to start my own rule."

"Of course." I stop looking and turn to her, my brows knit together. "What are you talking about?"

"We all know you have a crush on Bennett."

"On top of that, my mouth drops open. "I do not!"

"Soph, come on. You spend most of your free time with him. You're always happy around him. You look at him like he's the only one in the room."

"I scoff. "You're delusional. He's my *best friend*, Grace. Nothing"

ifferentThe shop starts to feel too warm all of a sudden.

“Tell me you’ve never had feelings for him.” Grace’s eyes are like pauses, they can see right through me.

“What “I-um-” I sputter, and she raises an eyebrow. “Fine. In high school, *tiny* crush on him, but I got over it whenever he left for college. I date *tbroke* guys—including Michael—and now there are no romantic feelings for I know avoid her eyes and grab another dress then start toward a dressing room g to the “So if he came up to you tomorrow and said he was in love with you would say what? Sorry, I don’t have feelings for you?” She throws quick fakeat me from behind as she trails me toward the dressing room.

“It sounds like you’re not going to believe my answer if it’s not *w more*. I want to hear,” I grumble as I hang up the gowns.

but it’s “I’m sorry, that’s not fair of me. I just think you denied your feelings :speratehe came back because you were with Michael. And now you’re not...”

a dress, “Thanks for the reminder,” I say sarcastically, and yank shut the curtain. She’s the room. I look in the mirror at my flushed skin and huff. I felt fine doing this with Bennett, but now I’m not so sure after talking to Grace o breakif she’s right?

“I don’t want you to get hurt is all. Not to say Bennett doesn’t have you feelings for you, but still. Even if you both love each other, fake relationships are too messy.”

I listen to her with a frown as I get undressed. “I feel like you’re projecting your romance books onto us. Bennett isn’t even interested in a You’re girlfriend. He’s never been in a long-term relationship, hence why he’s in the this with me.”

I pull on the first gown, a solid black number with charcoal floral and more.” on the bodice and tulle as the skirt material. It’s a little frilly for my taste.

better than most of what I've found. I hold it to me and open the curtain. X-rays: "Help?" I ask, turning around so Grace can see the undone zipper. she helps I step out and walk to a nearby pedestal with a trifold mirror I had a feet away. The dress fits well, and it should please my mother aside from othercolor. No doubt she'll be upset that I'm wearing *mourning colors* to a funeral. "Never mind the fact that plenty of people wear black to galas all the time." "It's beautiful on you," Grace says from behind me as I shift my hips to the side to make the tulle skirt sway. Flashbacks to cotillions as questions come to mind, making me grimace. If I didn't have such horrible memories of these kinds of events, I might be able to muster some amount of excitement at getting to dress up and dance.

"I think it's the best I'm going to find. I need to get ready for work tomorrow, so let's just get this one and go."

Grace helps me unzip it and I shut the curtain to change back into regular clothes. As I'm sliding off the gown, she speaks up. "What if I ever want a serious relationship with you?"

I laugh at her question, but then I'm drawn back to that moment in the kitchen when Bennett said he's changed from Two-Date-Ben. I shouldn't have head, tossing the memory aside. "I'm on a man ban, remember? Relationships amazing as I think Bennett is, I don't know that I want to be in a relationship with him. He has no experience. I don't think I could subject myself to heartbreak by him," I say honestly. After pulling my oversized band t-shirt over my head, I walk out with the gown slung over my arm.

"That's exactly what I'm worried about. I think if either of you develop feelings the other couldn't reciprocate, that it would be devastating."

My chest tightens at the thought of losing Ben. I've spent most of my life with him. It was hard enough when he was gone for college and med

n. I couldn't imagine living life without him in it. I hold back these th
r. After trying to formulate some sort of response.

r a few We walk side by side to the front of the store. I place my dress
om the counter and smile at the woman behind the register.

1 event. "I'm glad you found what you were looking for," the woman says
ne. polite smile.

ps from "Yes, me too. I was worried I wouldn't find a dress in time." She ri
a childup and I reluctantly hand over my debit card. A part of me wishes I
emories have let my mother dress me. At least I wouldn't be spending three h
ount of dollars on a dress I'll only wear once. It makes me sick to think that
the *sale* price.

tonight, "Have a nice day. Thank you for shopping at Bloom Boutique."

I thank her and then walk out with Grace trailing behind me.

nto my "You're right that it would be devastating, but I don't think anythi
Bennet happen," I say on our way to Grace's Jeep parked down the street. "I

has never shown any feelings toward me, and if he had them, I'm su
t in the come right out and tell me. He's only doing this because he thinks
ake my handle it as friends. And I feel the same way."

And as "I'll take your word for it," Grace says as she opens her trunk for m
a real don't say I didn't warn you."

irvive a "You sound like a character from a horror movie warning me not t
ee over secretly haunted house." I heave the ball gown into her trunk and th
back so she can close it.

veloped "And you sound like the girl who doesn't listen and ends up being
around by ghosts the whole movie," she counters, making me laugh.

my life "Touché."

school. We climb into her Jeep and right as she's pulling away from the cu

oughts, phone starts to buzz in my lap. Bennett's contact pops up on my screen. I glance at Grace then back down at my phone. *It's just a call with your friend, nothing to hide.* I nod at my self-talk then answer it.

"Hey, Ben," I say, and Grace turns her head toward me for a moment with a smile before looking back at the road.

"How's my fake girlfriend doing on this fine Wednesday?" she asks, looking at me. I turn my face toward the window as heat rises to my face. Why would I be reacting to a simple question like this? Sure the words *my* and *girlfriend* are in the same sentence. But the most important word in that sentence is *this*. All of Grace's warnings are messing with my head.

"I'm having flashbacks from all the tulle and florals in the boutique. I'm okay. I found a dress."

"That's good! The dress part, not the flashbacks," he says with a laugh. "And hey, not all of the events were bad. Remember that time we stole that cake and ate it under the table at Beatrice's party?" I laugh as the image comes to mind. Us ten years old, hiding under the table in formal wear, eating cake with our hands because we forgot to steal a fork.

"I remember how blue your teeth were from all that icing," I giggle. "But Grace's eyes on me, but I ignore her. "And then afterward my mom was speaking to me for like a week."

Emotion threatens to take over the happy memories. It was one of the best events I had my dad to run to when my mom went overboard. I'd hide in my study, and we'd eat chocolates together while he told me stories of his childhood mischievous acts. Those stories were better than any I'd ever read in a storybook.

"My mom made me brush my teeth no less than five times because of the color, my food coloring." Bennett's chuckle brings me back to the present and saves me from the past.

screen. I from the pain of memory lane.

our best “So, did you need anything?” I change the subject.

“Hm?” I hear the sound of a door shutting.

moment “You called me,” I remind him.

“Oh, I was just checking on you. I know you hate all this southe
society stuff.” Warmth overwhelms me. This is why I love Bennet

y am *Ifriend*, just to clarify. He’s one of the most thoughtful and caring men I

end are “Thanks, Ben.” I can’t hide the affection for him in my voice. “I

is *fake*.though. Now that I’ve found a dress I can breathe easy until Saturday

as I say it, anxiety creeps up and forms a tight knot of worry in my
ies, but rub the spot, hoping to ease it.

“I know you, Soph. You’re going to be holding your breath until a
igh that last event. I’ll be by your side, though. We’ll get through this togethe
er that if we have to hide under a table or two,” he jokes, and I smile in spite
anxiety.

a table “You’re the best fake boyfriend a girl could ask for,” I joke back
l forks.attempt to lighten my own mood.

o. I feel “That’s my goal.” His tone should be lighthearted but—and maybe
om not the distortion over the phone— he sounds almost serious. I grab my r

water bottle from the cupholder and take a sip, trying to calm down. I
the last hearing things. “So what is my fake girlfriend wearing?”

e in his My eyes widen and my water goes down the wrong way, forcing
his own cough and sputter. Grace looks at me with wide eyes and takes one h

oed time the wheel to pat my back. *Are you okay?* she mouths, and I nod, cough
the last bit of water.

of that “What?” I wheeze out into the phone.

ives me “What are you wearing to the ball? You know, so I can get the right

and coordinate. Are you okay?”

My eyes are burning from the whole fiasco.

“I’m okay,” I squeak out. “My drink went down the wrong way wearing a black ballgown with gray accents,” I tell him and fan my hair. Grace eyes me warily at a red light.

“I should have known you’d go for a black dress. It’ll make my job easier. I know, but Whitney is probably going to hate it.”

“Hopefully I’ve lowered her expectations enough that she’ll accept it.” Evenshowing up in something other than a t-shirt.”

Bennett’s laugh filters through the phone. “I’ll be by your side the night, so she’ll have to go through me to get to you anyway.”

I smile and look out the window again in an attempt to hide it from her. Even I don’t think my smiling so much around Ben means anything, but obviously it does to her.

“Thanks, Ben.” My nerves have lessened over the course of the conversation like they always do. Something about Ben puts me at ease. I won’t—I *can’t*—trade that feeling for the nervousness that comes with a fake date. My friendship with Ben is going to stay the same, fake dating or not. I’ll make sure of it.

must be

}; me to

and off

hing up

t colors

and coordinate. Are you okay?”

My eyes are burning from the whole fiasco.

“I’m okay,” I squeak out. “My drink went down the wrong way. I’m wearing a black ballgown with gray accents,” I tell him and fan my face. Grace eyes me warily at a red light.

“I should have known you’d go for a black dress. It’ll make my job easier, but Whitney is probably going to hate it.”

“Hopefully I’ve lowered her expectations enough that she’ll accept me showing up in something other than a t-shirt.”

Bennett’s laugh filters through the phone. “I’ll be by your side the whole night, so she’ll have to go through me to get to you anyway.”

I smile and look out the window again in an attempt to hide it from Grace. I don’t think my smiling so much around Ben means anything, but obviously, it does to her.

“Thanks, Ben.” My nerves have lessened over the course of our conversation like they always do. Something about Ben puts me at ease. I won’t—I *can’t*—trade that feeling for the nervousness that comes with a crush. My friendship with Ben is going to stay the same, fake dating or not.

I’ll make sure of it.

CHAPTER 6

CHAPTER 6

Bennett St. James

“Am I on speakerphone?” I ask my mom as I throw a pair of gym slippers into my duffle bag. Cordelia St. James, aka Dee, is known for putting me on speaker with the whole family without disclosing that she’s done so. I usually share something mildly embarrassing before I realize it, too.

“No, sweetheart.”

“Because I’m about to tell you something and I don’t need all the people and Nana going crazy before I can explain everything.”

“What is it? Is something wrong? Are you in jail?”

I shake my head. The woman jumps to conclusions like no one I’ve ever met.

“Mom, how could I be using my cell phone if I was in jail? I just want you to know that I’m bringing a date to the house tonight.”

“A date?! You’ve never brought a girl home before. Oh, I have to call your nana—this is great news! And I’ll need to call your sister, she’s been waiting—you’ll never settle down—”

“Mom! Breathe,” I say with a laugh. “Remember what I said about me explaining?”

I hear a breath released through the speaker. “Okay, I’m sorry. Who do I know her? I didn’t think you were bringing a date. I thought you were going to the gala with Sophie this weekend.”

“I am.” The line is silent and I grin while folding up a white t-shirt and putting it in my bag. I’m going to pick up Sophie soon so we can make the trip to Savannah and stay the weekend. It’s a few hours from here, so a day trip is really an option.

“Finally!” she shouts into the phone, startling me. I drop the shirt I was holding. “I’ve been waiting years for you two to figure this out. Have you bought a ring yet? How did you confess your love? Did she tell you she loves you?”

I blink in surprise. That was unexpected. I knew she’d be happy because she usually loves Sophie, but not *this* happy. “Mom, we’re just going on a few dates. Nothing serious. No love confessions or rings.” I pick the t-shirt back up and fold it, placing it in the duffle bag.

“You don’t casually date your best friend of over twenty years, Emma. Now, tell me who said ‘I love you’ first so that I can tell everyone the truth.”

I pinch the bridge of my nose and close my eyes. “No one has confessed their love. We’re going to these events together and we’re going to see how it feels. Sophie just got out of a relationship, she’s not ready for serious.”

“And what about you?” Her forward question catches me off guard. I don’t instantly know my response.

“I’m ready.” Even if others don’t think so. I’ve changed and grown up. I’m ready for something more, especially when it comes to Sophie.

“I see.” She pauses, making me nervous. My mom has always been an observant. She’s the only one I’ve been worried about figuring us out. I hold my breath waiting for her response. “You’re not telling me something.”

is she?that's okay. I'll figure it out eventually. In the meantime, I'll be hap
ou'd beyou two are finally taking a step toward each other."

I release the breath I was holding with a *whoosh*. "I'm glad you're
t to addIs it alright if Sophie stays at the estate this weekend? You know how
over to are with Whitney."

ip isn't "She's always welcome. But I think she should try to spend tin

Whitney this weekend. I know she's lonely up in that big house by her
iirt I'm "You can talk to Sophie. I'm never going to tell her to spend mo
ive youwith her mom, though. She's done too much damage."

first or "I know." Her sympathetic tone surprises me. Mom has never real
fond of Whitney, only putting up with her for mine and Sophie's sake

becausefeel sorry for her is all. I can't imagine losing your father *and* my kid
v dates.far away." I wouldn't wish losing a spouse on anyone, not even Whitn
up andSophie moved away from Savannah because of how she was

Otherwise, she might have stayed there.

Bennett. "She created that distance with Sophie and Carly, you know that.
story!" committed to attending all of these events, which is a big step." Of
nfessedthat step is only because she needs investors for her restaurant, but I
: how itthat detail to myself.

' "I suppose one step is better than none," she says, and I have a
d, but Ishe's not just talking about Whitney and Sophie. I zip up my duffle b
sling it over my shoulder.

vn. I'm "Alright, I need to get going so we don't get in too late. I'll let yo
when we get close."

's been "Drive safe! Tell Sophie we're looking forward to seeing her again.'

. I hold "I will, and you tell everyone not to go overboard about us dating."

ng. But "I will ... try." There's a smile in her voice that is no doubt indic

py thatthe social torture we're going to endure once we get there. We s
goodbyes and then I send a text to Sophie to let her know I'm on my w
happy. **Bennett: The best fake boyfriend ever is officially on the way.**

7 things **Soph: Ryan Gosling is picking me up?!?**

Soph: I might need to change out of my sweats.

ie with I roll my eyes at her joke. Picking up the garment bag holding my
self." walk toward my apartment door.

re time **Bennett: Haha, very funny. I was going to grab breakfast from
on my way, but now...**

ly been **Soph: I was just kidding! On the list of greatest fake boyfriend
. "I justtime it goes 1. You 2. Ryan Gosling.**

s living **Bennett: I'll see you in fifteen. Bacon, egg, and cheese bagel wit
ey. Butcheese?**

treated. **Soph: You know me :) thanks, Ben!**

You know me. Those words settle down deep and make a nice ar
Sophiehome in my chest. I *do* know her, which makes this whole fake bo
course,thing both necessary and frustrating. I want to skip ahead, but I kr
'll keepneed to take things slow. Risking what could be by pushing it is not ar
for me.

feeling It doesn't take long to get to the townhouse, but every single minute
ag andspent overthinking this weekend. I'm the one who suggested the id
now I have no idea how it's going to go. Fake dating my best friend
u knowsomething I imagined whenever I found myself having feelings for her

Just treat her like a girlfriend. I try to give myself a simple pep t
" fail. Because here's the thing: I've never had a girlfriend. That stupi

Date-Ben nickname exists for a reason. Even if that reason has nothin
ative of

say ourwith being a player and everything to do with being too focused on
ay. and work.

I'm not completely incompetent when it comes to romance though
best friend is a girl, and I have a sister. I've seen all the rom-coms and
Hallmark movies. I've also heard plenty of dating stories that have shown
y suit, I what not to do and what to do.

I take a steadying breath as I park in the driveway. *You can do this.*
Dale'slike she's a stranger. *One step at a time.* This self-talk is slightly
helpful, but my hands are still shaking when I walk up to the door.
s of allthem in my hoodie pocket after knocking.

The door flings open. "Bennington!" Lottie, one of our recently
h extrafriends, shouts. I give her a playfully exaggerated scowl. Her nickname
me is based on my wealthy roots and her own imagination. I don't care
but I do care for her, so I—most of the time—let it slide.

and cozy "Hey, Lottie, how's married life?" I ask as I walk in, fully aware that
y friendthe girls know by now about our fake dating scheme. Sophie told me
how we was no way she could keep it from them. So diversion is my best t
n optionavoid any drama.

"It's great! Callum is the best. He's at the batting cages with Brad
e of it is now, having some guy time." She pauses, spearing me with an inves
lea, but look. "So I came over here to visit and guess what I learn?" she asks
wasn't too-sweet smile.

o: "What's that?" I rub the back of my neck.

talk but "Just that you and Sophie are *fake* dating. What is wrong with you
d Two-hisses and hits my arm. I grab the spot she hit with a frown.

ig to do "Nothing is *wrong with me*. I'm helping Sophie achieve her dreams.

"You're in love with her! You don't fake date someone you're

schoolwith.” Her voice is low and she looks over her shoulder to make sure
has joined us in the foyer.

gh. My “I am not in love with her. Why does everyone keep saying that?”
cheesy She rolls her eyes at me like I’m the ridiculous one. “I know yo
own mefeelings for her, Bennett. Callum told me about the bachelor party.”

I sigh and run a hand through my hair. “Of course he did. He’s wea
*It’s not*it comes to you. I’m never telling him anything ever again.” I pause
y morehave romantic feelings for her, yes. But I’m not in love with her.”

I shove “Either way, this is a terrible idea. You need to tell her how you
know Sophie, and I know she’d want to know.”

married “Not to pull rank here, but I’ve known her longer.” I give her a lo
ame forshe huffs, crossing her arms. “And I know she’s not ready for that
e for it,bomb right now. We *both* know she’s still recovering from Michael.”

“That’s true,” she concedes. “I just don’t want her to get hurt. Can
at all ofknow if you hurt her, we can’t be friends anymore. And I kind of lik
ie therefriends with you.”

actic to I smile down at her. “I don’t know, it might be worth messing up so
have to hear you call me Bennington anymore.”

ad right She opens her mouth—probably to give a sassy retort—when Sophie
tigativebarreling into the foyer.

; with a “Sorry, sorry!” Sophie says, breathing heavily. “I know I’m mal
late. I couldn’t find my silver heels, since I never wear them. So I ha
on an archeological dig in the bottom of my closet.”

1?” She Her bangs are disheveled, making me want to reach out and smooth
clench my fists in my hoodie pocket against the urge. Her hair is down

” which is a little rare for Sophie since she works in the food industry. T
in lovelavender locks stand out against her sweatshirt. *My* sweatshirt. The ar

no one clothing makes my breath catch. Not to mention her bright eyes and
cheeks. She looks beautiful, and I'm not sure how I'm going to survive
weekend. I already want to kiss her and I've only been in her presence
you have maybe a minute. The desire is bound to increase while spending a
weekend with her.

back when "We're not in a rush. Your sandwich might be a little cold, but that's
fine." I do give an easygoing smile, though there's nothing easygoing about me
now.

feel! I "I don't think I'll even care, I'm so hungry." She laughs then turns
attention to Lottie. "I'm sorry I didn't get to chat longer, but I'll try to
look and time when I come back." They both hug and Lottie eyes me over her
kind of shoulder. Her look is a warning. I give her a nod of understanding,
that will ease her mind.

use you They say goodbye and Lottie walks away to go talk to MJ, who appears
to be in the midst of a creative streak and can't leave her room until her project
is done. MJ is usually very practical and straightforward, but I know from
I don't have her 'eccentric artist' moments as well.

I take Sophie's bags from her and she gives me a bright smile. The
moment that makes me want to give her anything she asks for on a silver platter.

"Breakfast *and* carrying my bags? You might actually beat out
King of the Gosling," she jokes as we walk to my car.

and to go "This is the first of many perks of being my fake girlfriend." I see
her nod down to grasp the passenger side door and open it for her. Her eyebrows
frown in appreciation, and I count that as a win.

1 today, "I'll have to return the favor somehow. Can't have our fake relation-
ship being too one-sided." She slides into the car with a smile that looks al-
most a little off-flirty?

and rosy “So you won’t be playing the indifferent girlfriend part?”

give this “Does that sound like me?” She looks up and meets my gaze, making
me forsuck in a breath.

the whole “Not at all.”

is all.” I

am right

turns her

to make

Ophie’s

hoping

obviously

maintaining

she can

be kind

r.

that Ryan

is a bag

of raise

ship be

most ...

“So you won’t be playing the indifferent girlfriend part?”

“Does that sound like me?” She looks up and meets my gaze, making me suck in a breath.

“Not at all.”

CHAPTER 7

CHAPTER 7

Sophie Cunningham

What on earth am I doing?

I glance over at Bennett as he turns right onto the interstate. He's got the kind of look that would usually put me at ease but now has my stomach in knots. I *flirted* with Bennett. Sure, it was only a line or two, but still.

I've never flirted with him before. Okay, well, there was that one time in high school when I tried to flirt with him to see what would happen .. he didn't understand what I was saying and just gave me this confused, admittedly cute-look. My flirting skills were lacking back then, and probably still are considering I just got out of a long-term relationship. Maybe that's why Bennett didn't call me out. He probably didn't even realize it! Well, that's the case.

It's hard not to respond in kind though when he seems to be teasing me in a romantic way. Bennett and I have always teased each other, but not in that way. He's talked about being my fake boyfriend a lot lately. Is he just kidding or is it a light of a weird situation? I shift in my seat and try not to look at him. If I stare at him too much he'll start asking questions. And since we've been best friends forever, it's hard to hide things from him.

Which is why developing a crush on him again would be awful. I tell way too many white lies to get him off the scent of my first crush. I *might* have made up a fake guy so that I could say I had a crush and it's all a lie. Now, almost a decade later, he knows me even better and knows something is off.

“Soph?” Bennett’s voice breaks into my spiral and I turn to look at him. His eyes are on the road, but I can tell he’s concerned by the downturned mouth. “Are you okay?”

See. The man can read me like a book.

“Just thinking about this weekend,” I say, hoping he’ll believe me.

“I told you I’ve got your back. You don’t have to worry about a thing,” I smile, “I know. You told your family?”

“I called my mom this morning. She was really happy about it.” He

“I told her not to go overboard, but I’m sure that all of Savannah and the surrounding cities will know by the time we get there.”

I shake my head. Dee is one of the biggest oversharers I know. I know she’s also got a huge heart and has loved me like I’m her own daughter for as long as I can remember. It’s hard acknowledging that someone who isn’t my mother seems to love me better than my actual mother, but I’m also grateful for her. I hope my childhood would have been much worse if not for her taking care of me.

She brought warmth and happiness into my darkest times, along with me in Bennett.

“I haven’t told my mom yet. Do you think I should before she finds out about the grapevine?” I cringe at the thought of telling my mother about dating the one eligible candidate that she would not want me to date.

He would be perfect in her eyes if not for his encouragement of me becoming an individual with a mind of my own. He’s too independent for her tastes.

I had to prefer it if he was a little more ... *moldable* to what she wants for my son. The guy who does business on the golf course and assents to sending our son not flat-to boarding school whenever she suggests it.

He would "You probably should," he says and shoots me a sympathetic look.

I would be even more upset if she finds out from someone else. And my mom would move pretty quick, so you might want to hurry."

When I groan and grab my phone from my tote bag. At least if I get there with now I can spend the rest of the drive in peace. As much peace as I can have who's headed to a town full of nosy people while fake dating her best friend can have.

"g." My mom answers on the first ring. "Are you on your way?"

"Well hello to you too. I lean my head back against the headrest, still laughing. "Yes, Mom, I'm on my way."

and she "I don't hear any car noises, are you not using your car phone? I'm going to get a ticket and it will go on your record."

But she I press my lips together tight for a moment, then respond. "Because as long as I'm driving, that's why I'm not using my car phone. I won't get a ticket," I say slowly, dreading her reaction.

For her. I "I was unaware Bennett was attending the event. I assume you're going to bring me in at Cordelia's, then," she says and there's a tinge of sadness in her voice. For a moment I feel sorry for her, but I know what it would be like to stay with her. I'd go crazy in a few hours. It would hurt both of us if she had stayed and then had to leave because of something she did or said.

After I'm "Yes ma'am, I am." I pause, gather my low reserves of courage, and say the other what I called for. "Bennett is going to take me to the gala, as we are actually going to be escorting me to all of the events," I say and glance at her. She'd

y life: at my fake boyfriend. He gives me a reassuring smile before turning his
kids offback toward the road.

“Sophie, I said you needed a date, not a friend. Bennett doesn’t cour
“She’lltone is clipped, her irritation unmistakable.

om can “That’s the thing-um-” I clear my throat. “Bennett and I *are* dating.

not just my friend anymore.” The words feel odd coming out of my
his overalmost like someone else is saying them while I lip-sync along. I pl
is a girlthe edge of my–*his*–sweatshirt. When I put it on this morning, it
t friendcomfort, but now I feel like I’m stepping into my role as a fake girlf

little too much. It’s hard not to cross lines when I don’t know where th

She huffs an annoyed sigh. “I can’t say I’m surprised that this c
ifling a come.” My eyebrows shoot up. “Cordelia always said it would

surprised that you’re dating someone so soon after your breakup, thou
You’re you sure that’s the best idea?”

I’m thankful that we’re not on a video call, otherwise, my face
Bennett iseasily give away my true feelings. What I want to say is: *You didn’t*
I speak *problem with me moving on fast when it came to you choosing ti*

Instead, I scowl at the windshield and reply, “I’m sure.” I try to m
stayingtone light, but I think my emotions slip through a little based on th
ompousBennett gives me. My mother stays silent for a moment.

like to “Very well,” she sniffs. “I will see you both at the ball then.”

ore if I “See you there.” She hangs up and I throw my phone back into my b
it carries some sort of disease.

and tell “Sounds like that went well.”

ll. He’s I groan at Bennett’s sarcastic commentary and reach up to rub my t
ce over “It went *swimmingly*. Why can’t she support me? Just for once?”

Bennett reaches over and squeezes my knee. The gesture catches

is focusguard, making my stomach flip. Bennett isn't usually so physically affectionate. "I'm sorry, Soph. I know you want her support, but sometimes it's just not her thing. She just doesn't know how to give it. You've got me though."

There's a smile in his voice, but I don't look to see it on his face. I'm too busy watching his thumb trace circles on the outside of my mouth. Each swirl of his thumb sends tingles up my spine. Warmth spreads everywhere his hand is and trails up to pool in my stomach. I clench my fingers to distract from the feeling. *What is happening to me?* Suddenly, I feel like I'm melting. My face is hot and my heart is pounding. I reach up and touch the knobs on the dash, frantic to get some air going through the car. Daylight has lights blink on and off as I try to figure out the settings in my panic.

"Whoa, whoa, what are you doing?"

"It's just too warm in here," I say, my voice coming out weirdly pitched. Bennett's hand lifts from my knee and he gently moves mine away from the buttons before pressing a few himself. Cool air begins flowing through the vents, shocking my flushed face back to reality.

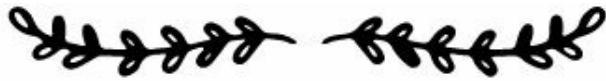
"She must have really riled you up," Bennett says and I nod, but stay silent. If I speak again I'll probably sound more mouse than human, and give him a look that's really going on. "Just close your eyes and try to get some rest. It's going to work out." He gives me another smile, and my heart confuses itself skipping in my chest.

I lean my head back and let my eyes flutter shut. Deep breaths soothe my erratic heart and bring me back to my senses. It's natural to feel a little off-balance around Bennett right now. Fake dating makes things weird. Bennett's smile he did was normal, even for a friend. I think. Everything is fine.

I can do this.

me off

ysically
people



I can't do this.

because My stomach is in my throat as we pull up to the St. James Est
y knee-length driveway lined with lemon trees stretches familiar befo
ls from Memories of climbing these very trees to hide from Bennett make my
toes to into a smile in spite of my nerves.

ike I'm There's a warmth here year-round that I don't think many other
vist the have. The St. Jameses are like warm apple pie on a crisp autumn m
ifferent sweet and gooey and comforting. My best childhood memories a
between here and my dad's study.

Bennett parks in the circular drive behind a few other cars. My hea
y high-up speed. I should have known that Dee would invite the whole fa
e away welcome us. Behind the antique French doors ahead is a slew o
ig from meaning, but overbearing family who love me too much. I'd rather th
the coldness of my own childhood home, but it's still nerve-wr
y quiet. Especially since Dee is virtually detective material in her ability to sni
e away lie. It won't be easy to pull one over on this tight-knit family. I bite
est. It's and consider calling it all off.

s me by "Hey, don't spiral out on me." Bennett's voice tugs me out of my
process. It's good he spoke up when he did because I'm certainly on th
still my of the spiral to end all spirals. He grabs my hand off my knee, and I
tle off-look at him.

ut what His eyes meet my own, crinkled at the edges from his encouraging
His thumb rubs circles on the back of my hand, sending my s
swooping once again. Does he know what he's doing?

“We’re just going to go in and be ourselves. I know my family is with chuckles, and it makes me smile. My nerves dissipate with every brush of thumb. “But they already love both of us. So what if we have to hold hands. The We’re doing it right now, and it’s fine. Right?” Something shifts in here me. a flash of vulnerability. He really wants to know if it’s okay.

lips lift I reach over with my other hand and cover his. “Right. To the something more. But to us, it’s just best friends holding hands. Like homes when we were kids.” I think I see his smile falter, but I can’t be sure orning: probably nervous, too.

re split “Yeah, like when we were kids. Except less running away from nonexistent monsters.”

rt picks I scrunch my nose at the memory. “It’s not my fault that statue in my family to mom’s garden looks like a goblin at night!”

f well- “I wouldn’t blame you if you hadn’t been in the garden and seen this than a million times before then,” he says, breaking into laughter that sprackling. me. I fall toward him, my head on his shoulder and our hands fluff out a together. Our laughter fills the car and it’s not until it subsides that I my lip our positioning. I jerk my head back, knocking it against my head and wincing.

thought “Are you okay?” Worry replaces his smile as my face twists up the edge pain.

turn to “I’m fine.” I’m about to say we should get out of the car, but the words in my mouth as Bennett’s hand sweeps under my jaw. His fingertips press back of my neck and head gently. He’s not looking directly into my stomach instead looking above my head. I’m frozen in place, barely able to breathe.

“What are you doing?” I rasp out and he finally meets my eyes, his hand stays behind my neck. The car is so silent I can hear him swallow

ld.” He “I was checking to see if you had a knot. Just the doctor in me, I
h of hisHe breathes out a laugh.

hands? A loud smack makes us both jump to opposite sides of the car. Out
is gaze,window is a smirking Daniel Worthington, Bennett’s brother-in-law, v
hands planted on the hood of the car.

m, it’s “Quit making out in there and come inside. The whole family ha
we didwaiting on y’all,” he says and a low growl of sorts comes out of E
e. He’smaking me whip my head over to look at him. He turns off the car wit
movements and pushes open the door with more force than necessary.

y from “Are you trying to give her a heart attack?” He grumbles and sla
door behind him. With shaky hands, I sling my tote bag over my sh
in yourand get out of the car. Daniel slings an arm around me and then Benne

“Aren’t you two adorable?” He squeezes us together, smushing my
e statueagainst his side. “I thought everyone went crazy when Naomi and
eads tottogether, but it’s nothing compared to the excitement around y’all. I
tangledbeen waiting on this moment for years.”

realize My brows furrow together. *Years?*

est and “What do you me—” I’m cut off by a cacophony of squeals and

Out the front door flits Dee, Nana, and Bennett’s aunt Chelsea. The
in mildwearing wide grins and bouncing with energy that can only come
gossip marathon. It’s like espresso to them.

ords die “Oh, we’ve waited so long for you two to open up your eyes!
rod thewrenches me from under Daniel’s arm and pulls me into a death grip
y eyes,own. She sways and squeezes and I feel a little like I’m on a ship d
athe. storm being tossed about by the waves.

but his “You have to tell us everything! Who admitted feelings first? What
/. other say? Where was your first date?” Nana’s questions come on

guess.” another and with each one, my anxiety rises.

“Now, now, let the girl breathe, Mama. There will be plenty of time side the their story soon enough.” Dee’s voice is happy but strangely calm. Nana with his me go but immediately pulls Bennett in for a boa constrictor hug that replaces Nana and draws me in for a much less aggressive hug.

as been “I’ve missed you,” I say to her, and she pats my back.

Bennett, “Ditto,” she says softly before pulling away. “I do expect a story that th jerky have been waiting for this match for a while now.” She pinches my cheek.

I muster up a smile that I’m hoping doesn’t reveal my nerves too much.

“Bennett and I didn’t discuss a story. We probably should have, but should not. Hopefully, they don’t interrogate us police style and split us up.”

“I wouldn’t put it past Dee to do so. Our stories of first confessions of love and cheekfeelings than friendship are bound to be so completely different that I got immediately give our fake relationship away.

“They’ve “I for one didn’t believe it, but I’m so happy it’s happening!” Dee bounces excitedly and gives me a half-hug.

“It’s so nice to see you, all of you,” Bennett speaks up. “But it’s a long drive, so I think we’ll save the inquisition for later.” He weaves through the small group of people to grab my hand. Will I ever get used to my life from this? It’s this odd concoction of perfectly familiar and yet utterly bizarre.

“I suppose we can let you two rest up before dinner.” Dee smiles at Nana. “But just so we’re clear: you two are in *separate* rooms of her funny business.”

My eyes go wide at her implication.

“Mom,” Bennett groans and I duck my head to hide my blush.

“I had to be sure you knew,” Dee says, but there’s a smile hiding in her aftertone. Bennett leads me through the door, past the joyful faces of his

members, and guilt pricks at my heart. We shouldn't lie to them, but v
to hearway they all chatter I don't know that they could keep it from my moth
ana lets glad I told her before we got here, the news definitely would have
g. Deeper by now.

I keep my eyes on the floor as we head toward the guest wing. I hav
this if I want my business to grow. No one will take me seriously
ough. I help from my mother, as much as I hate to admit it. And I can't date
in and Iman for real right after what Michael did. It's just a month or so, an
it'll all be over. Bennett and I can go back to being friends, and his
we did will be disappointed for maybe a week. Then everything will be l
s up. In normal.

deeper No harm done.
it we'll

Chelsea

been a
through
hand in
e.

s at our
ms. No

g in her
family

members, and guilt pricks at my heart. We shouldn't lie to them, but with the way they all chatter I don't know that they could keep it from my mother. I'm glad I told her before we got here, the news definitely would have reached her by now.

I keep my eyes on the floor as we head toward the guest wing. I have to do this if I want my business to grow. No one will take me seriously without help from my mother, as much as I hate to admit it. And I can't date another man for real right after what Michael did. It's just a month or so, and then it'll all be over. Bennett and I can go back to being friends, and his family will be disappointed for maybe a week. Then everything will be back to normal.

No harm done.

CHAPTER 8

CHAPTER 8

Bennett St. James

My heart is going to jump through my chest. And not because all women in my family are watching Sophie and me at the dining room like we're their favorite southern soap opera— *Love Beneath the Willow*. I'm at a post-marathon heart rate because I crossed so many lines in with Sophie. I thought a hand on her knee, holding her hand, all of that fine. But then I had to go feeling up her neck like it was something I did all the time.

She hasn't said anything, but there hasn't been much time for something. I dropped her off in the guest hall and then booked it to my childhood bedroom to think things over. We had two hours to rest before dinner. Rest for me looked like staring at my ceiling contemplating Sophie and running away back to Atlanta.

“So, now that we've all had time to settle down, I'm sure I surprised everyone when I say I'd love to hear the story of how this came to be.” Mom smiles from behind her glass of sweet tea. We're all surrounded by a large dining table, food scattered down the middle of it ready to be devoured.

“Yeah, how did you convince Sophie to finally give you a chance?” my sister Naomi smirks, and Sophie giggles.

“Who says I had to convince her?” I counter and she raises her eyes. “Okay, fine, maybe there was a little convincing on my part.”

“I’m not getting any younger over here Bennett, start talking!” my mother commands and everyone laughs. The problem with giving our story the name that we don’t have one. I glance to my left at Sophie, hoping for her assistance, but she just gives me a subtle nod. Okay, looks like I’m the star of our story. Fitting, since I’m the one who talked her into this.

“Well,” I clear my throat. The faces of my family shine with various degrees of intrigue. My father is the reserved type, but even he is staring down at me expectantly from his place at the head of the table. “Sophie needed a car. No, the ball, and I thought it would be a good time to try to be more than just a friend.” The second half of my sentence comes out sounding like a question. What was I thinking? Confusion crosses the multitude of expressions in front of me. My mother raises an eyebrow. I’m crashing and burning.

“That story is drier than the Sahara Desert,” my aunt Chelsea says to me. Daniel snorts. Panicking, I look to Sophie for support.

She lets out a laugh laced with nerves. “Ben,” she chides me and pats my shoulder before bumps my shoulder with hers. “You’re leaving out a lot of details. He was so nervous to tell all of you,” she says and grabs my hand on top of the table.

I stare at her delicate hand atop my own and not for the first time today my breath escapes me.

“I came to Ben about the ball, and he was just so adorably nervous about it this right now,” she says and squeezes my hand. I lift my eyes from her hand to mine to her pale pink lips tipped up in a smirk—the kind of mischievous look she only wears when pranking someone. “He told me he’s had

e?” Myon me since he left for college and he was just too scared to tell me un

You should have heard him stuttering so much admitting to it,” she c
ebrows.few snickers from my brother-in-law and uncle mix with the aww’s
grandmother and aunt.

ny nana I fight the urge to scowl, instead twisting my face into a saccharine
ough is “Oh yes, I remember now. You were so sweet too, you cried when I to
r someThrough her tears—” I cough to disguise a laugh. “She admitted she’
: authorcrush on me since high school.” Her nails dig into my hand, but
through the sting.

s levels “It was hard not to tear up at the beautiful *poem* he wrote me.” M
/n at usnarrow at her, but she stays smiling.

date for “If it’s anything like how he started the story I’d be crying too,” n
riends.” mutters and Sophie’s lips press together to avoid laughing. I shoot my
uestion.look, but she just shrugs.

y mom “What can I say?” I throw an arm around Sophie and squeeze h
against me. “I’m a romantic when it comes to this one.”

ays and “What a sweet story,” my mom says, her tone skeptical. “But why
need a date for the charity ball, Sophie? Plenty of women go solo t
layfullyevents.”

’s been Sophie tenses and for a moment I think we’ve been caught. “I didr
e table.one. I just said it to see if Bennett would step in as my date.”

lay, my Sophie and I are both smiling, but I know hers is fake because dee
she’s mad her prank has backfired. Mine is a smile of victory, but I’m
like heit reads more romantic than that.

er hand “I wouldn’t have thought this is how you two would get togethe
nievousmother’s gaze is searching, and I know eventually she’ll find wha
a crush

til now.looking for. I just have to hope she'll keep quiet when she does.
cos. A backstory isn't airtight enough to pull one over on her.

of my “These things rarely go the way we think,” Sophie says then looks
her eyes shining with—false—adoration. The expression undoes me
e smile.same. Only a day into our ruse and I'm already wishing it was real. Th
old you.not bode well for me. “I'm just happy Ben and I finally became sor
d had amore.”

I grin *If only.*

“We all are,” Nana says then raises her tea. “To Sophie and Benne
ly eyesyour friendship blossom into a beautiful forever together.”

Everyone lifts their glasses in agreement. The ice in Sophie's glass
ny auntas her hand shakes in the air. I run my thumb over her shoulder to
7 aunt acomfort her. My stomach tightens at my family's easy acceptance of
with Sophie.

er tight After the toast, my sister's pregnancy becomes the new hot to
Sophie and I can breathe easier. I remove my arm so I can eat
did youhindrance, and the loss of warmth I experience shows me I'm alrea
o thesetoo comfortable being close to her.

it need



p downAs soon as the guest bedroom door clicks shut behind us, Sophie is s
hopingaround with narrowed eyes.

“Tears, really?” She huffs and crosses her arms. “That was a bit mu
r.” My “You're the one who said I was all nervous and stuttering! You h
it she'sthe table laughing at me. All with that little smirk on your lips.” My e
to said lips for a moment, which are currently fighting back a grin. I t

as. Our eyes away to meet her gaze again. “Not to mention saying I wrote a poem, of all things.”

She glances at me, “You wouldn’t write me a poem? Ryan Gosling would,” she teases me with a look that says I’m not impressed with being compared to the guy who does the *Hey Girl* memes.

“Ryan Gosling wouldn’t put up with these antics because he’s my best friend. My family is never going to let me live this down.”

“Fine,” she laughs. “The poem was a little mean of me. But you know, it’s sinking like a rock out there. I just threw something together in the moment.”

“We definitely should have discussed our back story before we got together,” she rattles. “Yes, we should have. But we made it through.” She falls back on the bed, my sweatshirt scrunching up on her waist, revealing a tempting sliver of smooth skin. “Do you think your mom believed us?”

Dragging my eyes away, I walk over and sit on the edge of the bed. “I hope so, but I doubt she’s done with her investigation.”

“I hate lying to them,” Sophie says quietly, making me look down at her. Her lavender hair is splayed around her and her eyes are closed, her lashes resting on her cheekbones. She’d look peaceful if not for the furrowing of her brows giving her anxiety away.

“I know, I do too, but it’s all for a good cause, right?”

“Nana said *forever*.” She props up on her elbows, concern splashed across her face. “Are we going to break her heart in a few weeks?”

My heart warms at her calling my grandmother Nana like she’s her best friend. That warmth proves her point though. There are more people involved in this than I originally thought when I suggested this plan. My hope is that by the time our fake dating ruse, it won’t be fake anymore. But Sophie doesn’t tear my those intentions, so her concern is warranted.

“She’ll probably be sad for a little while, but she’s strong. Everyone
move on eventually.” *I think*. My family is of the overbearing, attached
type. I guess it’s likely that they will be a little more than just sad at the end of
my journey from there even if it is an end.

She pushes herself up so her position matches mine, then looks down at
me from her lap. “Will they hate me?”

My heart softens at Sophie’s concern.

“Soph, look at me,” I whisper and she listens, her glassy eyes reflecting
mine. “My family could never hate you. I’m pretty sure they love you
more than me.”

She sniffs and giggles. “They have invited me to things and forgotten
to invite you before.”

“I swear they do it on purpose to humble me.” We both laugh in
relief with our somber mood clearing slowly like clouds after a storm.

“You need some humility after getting that position at the university.
How did I end up with such a successful fake boyfriend?”

The tips of my ears warm at her compliments.

“My fake girlfriend is pretty successful too. You’re going to need a
room if you keep winning all those foodie awards,” I say in return
to capture her gaze again. “In case I haven’t told you lately, I really am proud
of you, Soph.” I know she doesn’t hear it from her family, not since I
passed, so I try to encourage her as much as I can.

“Mush,” she says with a giggle and wraps her arms around my waist
more than I hug. When we were in middle school, Sophie started saying ‘mushy’
in response to any particular compliment or kind word from me that was
not known to her. It was her way of deflecting attention, but now it’s called
thank you.

me will I wrap my arms around her shoulders and she tucks her head under my chin. We've had thousands of hugs, and though my feelings have shifted recently, her arms have always felt like home to me. I'm about to press a kiss to the top of Sophie's head when the door flies open and jumps apart, reliving the car moment from earlier, and whip our heads around the doorway.

My mom stands there, hands on her hips. "I thought I said sleeping in bedrooms, Bennett." Her pointed look makes me feel like I'm much younger than I am.

"We were just talking."

"I'm sure you were, but now it's time for Sophie to go to sleep and me to chat." I gulp. Here comes the real test. "Tell Sophie goodnight, meet me in the kitchen." She turns on her heel and disappears down the hallway.

"Good luck," Sophie whispers with a sheepish smile.

"Thanks, goodnight I guess." I laugh.

"See you in the morning."

"If I make it."

She laughs at my dramatics. I leave, shutting the door behind me, then make my way to what I hope isn't a doomed conversation. My instinct is to stay with Sophie or run out into the garden to hide, but Cordelia St. James' dad takes her *talks* very seriously, so I have to grin and bear it. Or at least try to.

My mom is pouring milk into glasses when I enter our kitchen. She's right in as the kitchen is the heart of the home, so she made sure our home is big enough to fit most of the family. It makes it less cozy when only two people are present, but that's a rarity. Though I and my sister have long since moved out, there's always someone staying here or visiting.

"I made red velvet cookies," she says, nodding toward the plate on the counter.

der my deep red, powdered sugar-coated cookies. They're one of my favorite lifted tomatoe from cake mix and rolled in sugar before baking. They're gone. I'm sugary and terrible for you, but I'd never turn one—or six—down.

en. We “Are they laced with truth serum?” I jokingly ask as I reach for one.

toward “Do they need to be?” Her singular eyebrow raise says more than ever could. She's still skeptical, and this conversation is likely going to determine where her opinion lands.

younger “Mom, come on.” I take a large bite of a cookie to occupy my mouth. I'm not a liar by nature. Most of my lies were related to sneaking candy or saying Sophie's mom was fine with her coming over after school work. For you most definitely was not. I got away with it often, but I think that was my mom letting me more than my own skill.

the hall. “Things aren't quite adding up. Sophie said you admitted to having feelings for her since college.” I nod and take a sip of milk. “I thought we raised you to be a confident young man. Were you really so timid as to not admit your feelings for years?”

I swallow slowly and try to gather my thoughts into a response. “My feelings for Sophie is more complicated than with any other woman. Sophie is my best friend. I didn't want to ruin our friendship.”

. James My mother surprises me by rolling her eyes. “That's the oldest excuse I've ever heard. Weak, too. I can't imagine that you've had feelings for her for a decade and said nothing about it.”

we had a “For most of that time I was in college and med school,” I hedge, and she makes her pause.

er have If this wasn't for Sophie's dream, I'd give up and tell my mom right now. I hate dancing around the truth. But this means a lot to Sophie, and beyond my own desire to show Sophie my feelings, I want her to achieve her dream.

she treats, think she has the ability to do it without her mom's help, but Sophie and otherwise, so I'm going to stick to the plan.

"And then I came back and she was with Michael," I add, hoping to start that thought process. I didn't have romantic feelings for Sophie before, but the Michael part is true.

I remember seeing her under his arm for the first time, her personality dim. Her smile was half its usual size. Until she saw me, she lit up like a Christmas tree. That moment, that smile, opened something in me that I never paid attention to before. It was like then she been a veil over my heart for years, making it impossible for me to see Sophie as anything other than a friend. But when joy danced across her face at the mere sight of me, that veil was torn away and my feelings were exposed.

"I believe that Michael would have stopped you from saying anything your Mom says. 'You'd never intrude on someone's relationship.'"

No matter how much I wanted to. I spent months holding in semi-conscious thoughts toward him. He had her wrapped around his finger and kept her. She's Then he broke her heart and left her behind to feel less than who she was. My fingers grip the edges of the counter just thinking about it.

"It was hard not to, but yes, I had to resist. Then this charity ball came along and it brought us together." I yawn, exhaustion starting to sink in as we drive and it brought us together. Tomorrow is likely to be a long day as we head home and the cozy pillows and quilts in my old bedroom call out from down the hall.

"There are still quite a few things that aren't making sense, but tonight is a big day. I'm helping with the silent auction part of the ball, and I need your rest as much as you do. Don't think you're in the clear yet," she says, pointing a manicured finger at me from across the island.

She says "Yes, ma'am. Are you at least going to be happy for us?" I keep my face
light.

She seals in "Of course! I'm over the moon that you two are together, but I'm glad
I left, be on alert. Relationships are complicated enough without playing
Bennett."

She sighs. "I know, Mom. I know."

... then As I walk to my bedroom after another cookie and downing my
milk can't help but consider her words. I don't think I'm playing a game, but
there had are a lot of moving pieces here and we haven't even made it to the first
move yet. I know we're adults, and our friendship has years of strength behind
her face but the worry about what this could do to us pricks at my conscience
wasn't nonethless.

*I'll just have to be careful, I think. Careful with our plan and with
my heart.*

non-violent

new it.

is. My

come up,

after the

cell, and

hall.

narrow

I need

warns,

“Yes, ma’am. Are you at least going to be happy for us?” I keep my tone light.

“Of course! I’m over the moon that you two are together, but I’m going to be on alert. Relationships are complicated enough without playing games, Bennett.”

I sigh. “I know, Mom. I know.”

As I walk to my bedroom after another cookie and downing my milk, I can’t help but consider her words. I don’t think I’m playing a game, but there are a lot of moving pieces here and we haven’t even made it to the first event yet. I know we’re adults, and our friendship has years of strength behind it, but the worry about what this could do to us pricks at my conscience nonetheless.

I’ll just have to be careful, I think. Careful with our plan and with my heart.

CHAPTER 9

CHAPTER 9

Sophie Cunningham

When I was nine, I told my mom that I wanted to be an actress. She looked down at me and said, *I don't think you have what it takes, dear*. I resented her for quite some time after that. She squished my childhood dreams like a bug under her Louboutin heel. Now, as I look at my reflection in the vanity mirror before me, I'm beginning to think she might have been right.

What was I thinking agreeing to this? I push a faux diamond stud earring into my ear and sigh. I've been avoiding Bennett and his family all day. Dad will likely scold me later for not spending enough time with her, but I can't face any of them. I snuck out of the house and took Bennett's car to a mechanic's shop, telling him on my way out that I needed to do some *business*. Judging by his look of disbelief, my vague lie didn't fool him.

I was desperate for time outside of this house. The one that's filled with memories of me and Bennett and his family who thinks we're going to live happily ever after. So I might have scrolled Pinterest and listened to true crime podcasts in a cafe until it was time to prepare for the gala. As soon as I got back, I locked myself in the room I'm staying in and started getting ready as slowly as possible.

My phone chimes on the vanity table and I read the message that's in.

Lottie: How's your mission coming along, Soph?

Before I can respond to my friend's message, more come in roommate group chat. Even though Lottie moved out, we'd never kicked her out of the group chat. She's one of us, even though we have to share her room with Callum now.

Grace: Have your feelings gotten mixed up yet?

Lottie: Have you kissed?!

MJ: Don't forget the man ban.

I take a deep breath, gather my wits, and type out a response.

Sophie: This isn't a mission, it's just a gala. There are no feelings mixed up. We have NOT kissed, why would you think that?? A man ban is top priority!

I've now added lying to my best friends to my list of awful deeds. All my feelings toward Bennett have been thrown into an electric mixer on high speed. I'm not sure if they're going to come out more like cohesive dough or a crumbly mess. All of his little touches and secret coffee have gone straight to the part of my brain that overanalyzes. The part that's nothing better to do than keep me up replaying his thumb making circles on my knee or his hand on the back of my neck in my hair.

It makes no sense to get caught up in Bennett's actions though. He doesn't want anything real with me. If he did, he'd say so. But even if he did, I'm not sure what I'd do about it. This year is supposed to be about me as I can't get caught up in a whirlwind relationship with my best friend's ready people. Especially since he has no relationship experience. It would

s comesetting my fragile heart in the middle of the Atlanta interstate and he doesn't get run over.

Lottie: Boo, you're no fun. Couples kiss, you know, even of th
to ourvariety. **Grace, back me up with your romance novel expertise.**

ick her **Grace: This is true. All fake couples share a kiss at some point.**
er with**bound to.**

I swallow and twist my earring nervously. I can't kiss Bennett. I'd n
able to look at him again.

MJ: If you kiss him, you'll break the terms of the man ban.

Sophie: I'm not breaking the terms. No kissing will be happenin
attending a ball together as a fake couple, that's all.

ings to Lottie: We'll see...

and the I turn my phone on 'Do Not Disturb' and throw it onto the bed. I
hide from all my friends, or else I might call this whole thing off befo
It feelseven slip on my gown. It's almost time to leave and I'm sure Bennett
c standknocking on the door any second, but my motivation is waning. M
ore likedon't need to expand my business after all. I can live with one suc
t smilesfood truck. Who needs dreams, anyway?

that has I'm chewing the lipstick off my bottom lip when a knock sound
cles ondoor.

"Soph, are you almost ready? I know Whitney isn't a fan of tar
doesn'tBennett says, sounding like he couldn't care less about my mother's
tell me,on punctuality.

it me. I I shake my hands in front of me, trying to dispel my nerves.

l of all "Soph." His voice is gentle and slightly muffled through the darl
be likedoor. "I know you're nervous, but it's going to be alright. You did gr
night. We just have to do that again."

oping it My anxiety dissipates some at the sound of his soothing voice.

“Okay,” I respond quietly.

ie fake “Okay as in you’re going to come to the ball? Or okay as in jumping out the window right now and you don’t want to alert me?”

You’re I giggle and shake my head.

“I’ll be out in a minute,” I say through my laughter.

ever be “I’ll be here.”

The idea of Bennett being right outside of the door while I’m ch shouldn’t cause my palms to sweat, but it does. I silently thank the L **ig. Just** the store had a black dress because I have a feeling that I’m going to b most of the night. Stress sweat isn’t the most glamorous thing.

I shimmy into the dress and I’m able to get it up most of the way. need to around, trying to grasp the zipper to pull it the rest of the way, but all re I can scratch my upper back. Everything important is covered, but the dr will be isn’t fully zipped. My hands try once more, my breathing heavy as maybe I myself into an awkward pretzel woman. Nothing works, and I huff in a successful the ridiculous dress. T-shirts don’t give you these problems. L definitely don’t. Why can’t they make gowns that are easy to zip?

s at the I look at the door, nerves settling in my stomach. I need help.

raging blush heating my face, I open the door. Bennett springs off the lines,” was leaning on and blinks at me, taking me in from head to toe. If I opinion blushing before, I am now.

“Could you-um help me zip this the rest of the way?” I try to m question sound casual, but my words come out stilted.

k wood “Sure, I can do that.” He clears his throat and adjusts the tie arou eat last neck before following me into the room. I watch in the mirror as he s behind me. He looks unbearably handsome in his black tux. It mu

been made for him, because it fits his lean figure perfectly, showing love of running and swimming. He wore formal wear to Lottie's wedding you're year, but I was too busy having my heart broken to notice how good he probably looked.

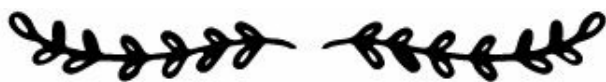
His knuckles brush my upper back, making me shiver.

"Sorry," he whispers while grasping the zipper. I stay silent as he pulls it upward. His eyes rove over our shared reflection and I follow their path. The top of my dress is fitted, stopping at my hips before flaring out into layers of black tulle. The fabric brushes the ground, hiding the silver heels I'm wearing. "You look beautiful, Sophie." His voice is gravelly, his gaze intense.

I reach for his hand. "You're not so bad yourself," I whisper. Something in his eyes stops me. I do *is that... desire?* It can't be. He opens his mouth to say something, but the still sound of conversation floats into the room. Everyone must be on their feet. I twist out. "Let's go so we're not late," I say and he nods, but looks as if he wants to say more.

Usually I'd stop and push him to tell me what he's thinking, but I don't know if I can handle it tonight. My brain is already a cocktail of indignation and anxiety, I can't add to it. So instead, I take my best friend's outstretched hand, and head to the ball.

wasn't



take the

"Are you ready?" Bennett asks, his hand warm and comforting around mine. We're currently standing outside of the manor where the ball is being held. Bennett hands his keys to the valet. Great, now we're stranded. If we don't have an escape, we'll have to wait on someone to return the car to us.

off his “Nope.” My stomach churns and has me wondering if my panicking last lunch might reappear soon.

Good he “Just breathe, okay? I’ve got you, and I’m the best fake boyfriend to remember?” He squeezes my hand, grinning down at me. I give him a thumbs up and he responds by gently tugging me toward the door.

He tugs it Two bored-looking men flank the ornate, oversized doors at the front of the manor. When our feet touch the top step, as if on cue, they open the doors for us. Golden light cascades into the cool night and beckons us inside. My skirt of my dress swishes softly as I walk hand-in-hand with Bennett. The manor is lit with hundreds, possibly thousands of candles. From far

I can’t determine if they’re real or fake. I wouldn’t put it past the hosts. It’s all real candles. It’s warm enough in here to feel as though they did.

When he “I don’t see your mom,” Bennett says into my ear. His breath near my ear sends a chill through me.

She wants “I don’t either.” And I’m relieved. Maybe I’ll have some time to gather my wits before heading into war.

I don’t Bennett leads me through the clusters of people into the ballroom. The main event is taking place. A large chandelier hangs down from the tiered ceiling. It too is lit by candles instead of bulbs. Swathes of shimmering gold fabric decorate the tables, along with tall orchids as centerpiece. The men relax at the tables while the women stand nearby, likely unable to sit comfortably in the dresses they’ve chosen.

Other less jaded women might enter this room and be awed by the decadence and glamour. I, unfortunately, see past it. The room is beautiful, but everyone here—including me—has an agenda. So underneath the glossy facade and champagne glasses lies a world of deceit, and I’m sick to my stomach thinking I’m a part of it tonight.

“How about a drink?” Bennett’s voice rips me from my study of the
“That would be wonderful. I think my throat is drying out from
here is, perfume.” I laugh.

“Why don’t you find us a table and I’ll go get some refreshments?”
“Okay, sounds good.” He walks off toward the series of food tables
front of the room and I watch him go for a moment before turning my attention
e doorstables around me. I spot one hidden away behind a pillar and grin. I
de. This will be my base hiding spot for the night. I’ll venture out when I
Inside, then retreat whenever necessary.

I’ve almost reached my safe house—er, table—when a voice stops me
t to use tracks.

“Sophie, you’re late,” my mother says. Anxiety ripples through my
ny neck the sound. *Here we go.*

“Hello, mother,” I say and turn to face her, hoping my pasted-on smile
ther my convincing.

“Perhaps I should have made being punctual a part of our little deal.
I where “I wasn’t late, so it would be fine if you did.”
the tall, Her lips pinch together at my defiant words. This has been a re
age and problem in my life. I never know when to play along or rebel. It makes
is. Mensense to choose one method, but I’ve never been a decisive person.

“Yes, well, it seems as though you’ve chosen to undermine our
name in another way.”

My forehead wrinkles in confusion. “I’m sorry?”

“Yes, you should be. Wearing that hideous out-of-season dress that
r smiles you look like you’re headed to some sort of elaborate funeral. I mean
tomach Sophie, *must* you wear black so often? The color washes you out and

room. your purple hair stand out so much more. It's not fit for someone carry all theCunningham name.”

Any smidgen of confidence within me has been erased. Part of me she's being ridiculous, but the other part is staring down at my s acrosswondering if black *does* make me look too pale. Not to menti n to thewonderful call back to what Michael told me the day of our breakup: Perfect.*not marriage material. You have purple hair and work in a trailer.* need to, An arm slides around my waist and soft lips are pressed against my causing a burst of electric tingles to flicker across my skin. “Sorry I e in mylong, beautiful, there was a crowd,” Bennett says, startling me. I loo him, and the sweetness in his gaze takes my breath away. *Fake, this is body attell myself, but what was that kiss?* Unable to handle the emotions ris: steam inside me, I turn back toward my mother. Her mouth is set smile issignature scowl. I'm sure the expression would leave many wrinkles didn't get Botox done often.

” “Here's your champagne.” I take the chilled flute glass from him. what did I miss?” he asks, looking between my mother and I. curring “Nothing at all,” she says calmly. “I was merely telling Sophie t as moredress suits her personality quite well.” The disdain in her t unmistakable, but her words themselves aren't unkind.

family “It does, doesn't it? A gorgeous gown for the most wonderful w know.” He smiles down at me and it takes all I have not to tear up rig in the ballroom. My mother turns to grab a champagne flute from the s : makestray walking by. Taking advantage of her look away I mouth *mush*, t, reallygrin widens. My mother turns back toward us, her eyes sharp and watc l makes “Thank you,” I say quietly as I avert my gaze, unsure of how to res: either of their sentiments.

ing the “You two seem rather close. I was under the impression this was ne
mother picks at an invisible piece of lint on her sleeve.

knows Bennett’s arm moves up to my shoulders and tucks me further i
handsside. I wrap one arm around his back while the hand holding my char
ion thestays in front of his torso. He feels solid and steady, like an anchor
You’re storm that is my life right now.

“We’ve waited a long time for this moment, so it feels less new
temple, actually is.”

took so “You’re serious, then,” she says, her shrewd eyes observing us c
k up atlike a jungle cat, ready to pounce on the first sign of insecurity.

fake, I “We’re taking things day by day,” Bennett replies smoothly. I
ing likewhere he gained his confidence. This is no longer the flummoxed, r
in herBen from last night. He’s sure and unphased, his green eyes ha
s if sheunyielding against the force that is Whitney Cunningham.

My mother opens her mouth to speak again when her name is ca
“Now, woman at a table nearby is waving her over. My mom flashes her
smile, then sashays toward Bennett and me.

hat her “I need to make my rounds, but I’ll be nearby if needed.” Translati
one is *be watching you*. She slinks away to a conversation of faux laugh
alternative motives. I take a sip of my champagne, but it doesn’t sit
oman I my nervous stomach, so I set it down on the table next to us.

ght here “I’m sorry I left you. I should have known she’d take advantage
server’s being by yourself.” Bennett wraps his other arm around me in a full hu
and hiskisses the crown of my head. My nerves twist my stomach into knots
hful. are already blurring and I feel as though I drank a whole bottle of char
pond to instead of one meager sip.

“It’s okay,” I manage to get the words out. “You just left me in a lio

w.” My expecting me to come out without a scratch.”

He pulls back, looking down at me with a frown. “What did she say into his “That we were late.”

mpagne “We were not.” I give him a look that says I know. “What else?”

r in the “That my dress makes me look like a corpse bride.”

His eyes flash in anger. “She said that?” The low growl of his voice than itgoosebumps spread on my arms.

“Essentially. Does my dress make me look pale?” I wouldn’t call arefullyinsecure, but I think even the most confident woman can be knocked by her own mother’s comments. So yes, I’m fishing for compliment: wondersea of Bennett, but I don’t think it’s a big deal.

nervous “Sophie, don’t let her get to you. I’ve already told you how stunnird andlook. We may be faking our relationship, but there is nothing fake about beauty tonight.”

illed. A I take in a breath, surprised by how forward he’s being. “I’ll try not a politeher get to me,” I say instead of acknowledging his compliments.

“Good girl.” He grins and pulls me in once more. His strong arion: *I’ll* steady heartbeat settle me back down, making me smile into his chest. ter andtonight won’t be so bad after all.

well in

of you

ig, then

s. Lines

mpagne

n’s den

expecting me to come out without a scratch.”

He pulls back, looking down at me with a frown. “What did she say?”

“That we were late.”

“We were not.” I give him a look that says I know. “What else?”

“That my dress makes me look like a corpse bride.”

His eyes flash in anger. “She said that?” The low growl of his voice makes goosebumps spread on my arms.

“Essentially. Does my dress make me look pale?” I wouldn’t call myself insecure, but I think even the most confident woman can be knocked down by her own mother’s comments. So yes, I’m fishing for compliments in the sea of Bennett, but I don’t think it’s a big deal.

“Sophie, don’t let her get to you. I’ve already told you how stunning you look. We may be faking our relationship, but there is nothing fake about your beauty tonight.”

I take in a breath, surprised by how forward he’s being. “I’ll try not to let her get to me,” I say instead of acknowledging his compliments.

“Good girl.” He grins and pulls me in once more. His strong arms and steady heartbeat settle me back down, making me smile into his chest. Maybe tonight won’t be so bad after all.

CHAPTER 10

CHAPTER 10

Bennett St. James

This evening with Sophie is a unique kind of torture. It wouldn't be so if she wasn't so achingly beautiful. The way her dress fits her makes me want to place my hands in the dips of her waist and pull her close constantly. I have taken advantage of that opportunity more than once tonight already.

Everything about her is enticing. Her gray eyes are enchanting under the dim candlelight. They draw me in, like a smoke signal made just for me. Those same eyes catch mine from a few feet away. An investor's wife is talking to Sophie, and I'm acting as her way out. Her charcoal nail polish glints as her fingertips reach up and gently twist her earring. *That's my*

I step up to them. "Excuse me, Mrs. Lordale, but I need to steal my girlfriend away. We haven't had a chance to dance yet," I say in my most respectful tone. The older woman smiles and pats my arm.

"Oh to be young and in love." She sighs happily. "I miss those days."

"Maybe you can find your husband and have him take you for a walk," she says, and she glares off in the direction of a group of men holding wine glasses and laughing loudly.

"I'm afraid my husband values conversation with colleagues more than dancing."

dancing these days.”

“Then later on I can dance with you myself. We can make him jealous with a playful wink that makes her blush and pat her silver hair.

“You hold onto this one, Sophie dear, he’s liable to get snatched up. Sophie laughs. “Yes, ma’am, I will.”

I lead her onto the dance floor. A languid jazz song is being played by a band nearby. We both learned various forms of dance when we were younger, so it doesn’t surprise me when Sophie falls in step easily as I lead her around the floor.

“Since when did you become so smooth?” she asks before I spin her slowly, then back into my arms.

“Is that a compliment?” I ask with a smirk, making her roll her eyes.

“It’s me marveling at how you’re able to fake things in front of my friends... but can’t string together a sentence in front of yours.”

“I strung together a sentence or two,” I defend and she laughs, the sound bubbly as the champagne being served tonight.

“I saved us last night and you know it.” She gives me a look, daring me to defy her. I have the urge to do it once more just to see how she reacts. “So what changed?” she asks.

I maneuver us around a couple who might have had too much to drink based on their sloppy footwork and dazed faces. “I had time to think about you.” Her head bobs as if she understands. “And the words came easily.”

“I knew you needed me. I hate how your mom treats you.”

Sadness washes over her features, shadowing the brightness her mother’s whiskey had caused. “Thank you for saving me. I wish I didn’t need it so much.”

Her dress brushes against me as she continues moving about the dance floor. Other couples are around us, but

fall away whenever I look at Sophie. She commands the room and
lous,” I even realize it.

“I’m sure it’s hard, especially since you spend most of your time a
” her.”

“I thought it would get easier as I got older, but in some ways, I s
ed by alike a little girl under her thumb. This investor dilemma just proves th
e werewith all the work I did, I can’t get away from her influence.”

s I lead Sensing that we need some more privacy, I guide us to the edge
dance floor. “Are you sure you can’t get investors some other way? A
her outas I enjoy being your fake boyfriend, we could have avoided these
altogether if there was another way.”

“The few offices I went to were quick to dismiss me, citing my
motherexperience. I have the experience though, I’m just not old and prop
they want.”

ound as Our movement slows to a simple sway in place. I look down
wracking my brain on how I could help. “Could you try some r
g me tocould—”

s, but I She cuts me off, hurt in her eyes. “Bennett, this is the only way.
wants me for me in this world. I’ve tried and it didn’t work. I appreci
o drink, believing in me, but there are certain things that are just facts of life.”

ink, for I frown down at her. I can see pain all over her face, marring her
er whensunny disposition. I want to push her, to show her she’s capable of m

I don’t want to hurt her. I grew up in a loving family who encouraged
aughterSophie didn’t. So I have to be careful with how much I push because
ch. She end up sounding like her mother accidentally.

as we “Okay, I won’t push anymore.” *Tonight*. “I’ll just be your smootl
out theybetter-than-Ryan-Gosling fake boyfriend.”

doesn't She laughs again and knowing I caused it is like the first sip of coffee
the morning. It makes me feel alive...and want even more.

voiding "You're ridiculous."

"You're beautiful," I counter, making her eyes widen a touch.

till feel "You've said that a lot tonight."

at even Our movement picks up along with a change in song. I lead us around
floor once again.

of the "Am I not supposed to say those things about my girlfriend?" I smile
s much away, then pull her back, this time closer than before. "It would
events believable if I neglected to compliment you."

She tilts her head up to look at me, questions swimming in her eyes. "I
lack of suppose it wouldn't. I feel as though I haven't been the best fake girlfriend
per like you in that regard." My heart picks up speed as her eyes seem to take

"What can I do to make it up to you?" I can think of a lot of things, but
at her, which would be okay for *friends* to do.

more? I "Make me dinner this week, and we'll even out the score."

She smiles up at me, and I have the urge to give her the world. It's
No one and unsought but present all the same. My feelings are progressing
ate you lightning speed, and I don't know how to slow myself down. If Sophia
decide she wants to date me for real, I'll likely already be in love with
usually the time she even thinks about us that way.

ore, but "So now we're keeping score?"

me, but "Naturally," I say with a grin. "And you're losing."

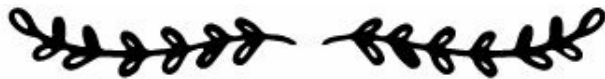
I could "I'll have to see what I can do about that."

"You should know, I'm terribly competitive."

h, way- "You act as if I don't know you. As if knowing you isn't exactly how I
beat you, and I'm *going* to beat you." Her tongue flicks out and licks

coffee in bubblegum pink lips, stirring desire deep within me.

This talk is all fun and games to her, nothing serious, but my heart is all the same. Flirting with Sophie is more than fun to me, it's addictive as a wildfire and I'm drawn to her blazing light. I know I'm going to get it but I'd rather be consumed by her than barely warm next to anyone else and the



pin her

don't be "Shhh," I whisper to a giggling Sophie as we ransack my family's pantry for snacks. You'd think we got into the champagne, but no, we're drinking beer. "I was successful tonight. Sophie managed to woo some potential investors by reading her portfolio, and we both managed to make everyone around us think we were a happy couple. It wasn't hard, considering we are one, none of us is a 'couple' is a loose term right now.

"Do you remember doing this as kids?" She boosts herself up on the counter in a seated position facing me, her ball gown puffing out around her. "Of course I do. *Someone* was always too loud, waking at least one parent up and forcing us to hide." I hand her a bag of peanut M&M's while she giggles. The candy is in the bottom of the pantry, but it's only February so it should be safe to eat. Assuming it's from *this* Christmas. I also find a bag of—likely expired—gumballs next to her. If anything, I'm helping my mom clean out her pantry.

"You were always making faces at me, so I couldn't hold back my laughter!" She kicks one of her legs up, trying to jab me, her bare foot out from under the dress. I dodge the attack and smirk.

now I'll "What's your excuse now?"

checks her She shrugs, throwing an M&M in her mouth. "I'm just happy, I guess."

Warmth bursts through my chest. “That’s good, Soph. I want you racing happy.”

She’s Her eyes lock with mine and I feel a tug within me. Is this a moment burned, feels like a moment—

A hard object pelts my cheek and I blink in surprise. Sophie uncontrollably, falling to the side slightly.

“Did you just throw candy at me?”

She continues laughing and shakes her head, her lavender hair swirling around her face. She took it out of the updo on our way back, complaining that the pins were hurting her scalp. It’s slightly wavy first into twist it was in, but it looks soft and tempting enough to run through my fingertips.

“You should have seen your face,” she wheezes as she’s consumed by laughter.

I glare playfully at her and cross the kitchen until I’m right in front of her. My legs hanging down. My hands find her waist, but instead of lingering, I try to tickle her. She gasps and then falls into a fit of hysterical giggles, flailing from me and pushing me with comically low force.

“Stop” -she gasps- “it!”

“You have to reap the consequences of your actions, Soph. How do you learn?”

She keeps hitting me-if you can even call it hitting. Her sweet laughter ticks my the empty kitchen and my heart.

A throat clears, making me whip my head toward the sound. Mom stands in the doorway, her arms crossed, the faintest hint of a smile on her face.

“We’re in trouble,” Sophie whispers, her breath fanning my cheek.

u to bethen that I notice my hands are still on her waist, and I'm leaning v
close to her. Except, we're dating, so according to my mom's expec
nent? Itthis is normal ... I don't move.

"I missed waking up to this," my mom says, leaning against the doo
giggles "You're not as good as you used to be though, you didn't hear me com
"I forgot to listen for you." I breathe out a laugh.

"I expected to get in here to find crumbs on my counter and pretend
wishingyou two hiding in the pantry meant I didn't see you."

k here, "You knew we were in there?!" Sophie exclaims, making my mom l
rom the "Of course I did, but I trusted you both, so I let it slide."

igh my "Why did you keep up the charade?" I ask. I sort of suspected she k
was strange that we never got caught.

ned by "I figured you two had more fun hiding than if I told you it was oka
always ended up going to bed after I came to catch you anyway. It go
t of herpoint where I'd stay up reading, then when I got tired, I'd come to find
I begin "I should be mad at you for ruining my childhood illusions, but I lo
hittingtoo much," Sophie says, and my mom gets that look that happens whe
trying not to cry. Spoiler alert: she always ends up crying.

"I love you too, sweet girl. I'm happy you and Bennett are together,
lse willI think something is amiss."

I feel Sophie tense beneath my fingertips.

iter fills "Why would anything be amiss?" Sophie's bold question surprises :
I'm curious about where my mom's head is, too.

y mom "No reason." She waves her hand in dismissal. "It's been a long nig
on herprobably speaking nonsense. You two try to keep it down if you s
here."

ek. It's "Yes, ma'am," Sophie and I say in unison, watching her leave.

way too After she's out of the kitchen, we turn our heads to face each other. I'm still close to Sophie, my hands on her waist. Our noses brush together. Her eyes are wide and dark in the low light of the kitchen. I look down at her lips, which are slightly parted. Her breath comes out in a puff against my skin, smelling of candy. I wonder if she'll taste sweet if I kissed her.

My pulse is thrumming in my ears. *What if I closed the distance between us now?* I meet her eyes again. Not a word is breathed between us, and the tension is palpable. If one of us spoke we'd come close to brushing lips. Heat radiates off her skin where I'm holding her. I lift a hand off her waist, intending to reach up to touch her jaw. The movement makes Sophie startle a little, and she shifts slightly. A sound akin to a thousand marbles hitting the tile floor makes me flinch. When I do, my dress shoes step right onto the source of the noise. You scattered gumballs. I lose my balance and wave my hands in the air like a tightrope walker trying to stay upright.

"Ben!" Sophie exclaims as I fail in my attempt to stay standing, toppling awkwardly to the ground. The cold tile mixed with the candy feels terrible on my tailbone, making me groan. Sophie moves off the counter carefully and kneels beside me, her dress like a tulle blanket over my legs.

"Are you okay?"

"I'll be alright," I grit out. My pride is hurt more than anything else. I was about to kiss my best friend, and now I'm on a kitchen floor with my face smashed into my best suit. I guess my ability to be smooth ran out at the moment.

"Why don't you go get cleaned up and lay down? I can sweep up the mess for you since it was my fault. I think my dress knocked the package over."

I push myself onto my knees, then to standing. Pain radiates from the spot where that first hit the ground, and I'm sure I'm going to have an ugly bruise tomorrow.

Except “I don’t mind helping clean,” I say, even though I want nothing more than to hide in my room and pretend none of this happened.

She glances at me and then turns to go. “Don’t worry about it. Go rest.” She pats my shoulder. I give a weak smile and then turn to go. “Hey, Ben?”

“Yeah?” I turn over my shoulder to see her biting her lip. “Yeah?”

“Nothing! Just, uh, hope you sleep well. I bet it’s a long drive back home tomorrow.”

“Thanks, Soph.” I turn back and head toward my room down the hallway. I wonder what she was going to say.

Softly.

One step

sound:

or like a

sliding

ribble on

ly, then

and I was

with gum

in the gala.

the mess

the spot

was there

“I don’t mind helping clean,” I say, even though I want nothing more than to hide in my room and pretend none of this happened.

“Don’t worry about it. Go rest.” She pats my shoulder. I give a weak nod and then turn to go. “Hey, Ben?”

I turn over my shoulder to see her biting her lip. “Yeah?”

She wrings her hands together. “Nothing! Just, uh, hope you sleep well. It’s a long drive back home tomorrow.”

“Thanks, Soph.” I turn back and head toward my room down the hall.

I wonder what she was going to say.

CHAPTER 11

CHAPTER 11

Bennett St. James

I rake my hands through my hair, letting out a frustrated growl as I lose focus on my paperwork *again*. It's impossible to get anything done when the weekend is all I can think about. I didn't sleep last night, because every time I closed my eyes, I thought of Sophie. Her soft skin as I pulled up the zipper of her dress, her fingers toying with her earring whenever she was nervous, her breath on my face when we almost kissed. Rather, when I *think* we kissed.

That moment has been the real sleep-stealer. She didn't move away when our noses brushed, but she also didn't move any closer. Was she in shock? Did she feel what I was feeling? And then there's the fact that I could have sworn she was going to say something before I left the kitchen. I wish I knew what would have happened if the situation had gone differently. It would look like if I had seized the moment with her.

I'm ready to confess the truth, and we've only gone to one event. I don't know if I can make it through another ball pretending that I like her when I'm actually liking her. It's driving me up the wall. Every second I spend working is a second spent in agony because I want to kiss her and can't. I have

able to talk to anyone about it either, because our friends are too not protective of Sophie. They won't be unbiased in their advice on whether should be more than friends or not.

I push my laptop away with a groan. This is pointless. I'm not anything of importance done. If I wasn't brand new on the job, I might leave early, that's how scattered I feel. My eyes are drawn to the clock three frames on the edge of my desk. In one, Sophie stands with my father in front of the Christmas tree. She's got a giant grin on her face and has her arms up behind my youngest cousin Kira's head. The other photo is of my mom, dad, sister, and Sophie standing with me on the day I graduated from Harvard. Sophie is almost smiling bigger than me in that one. The last photo is of just me and Sophie on the day her truck made it on a local morning commute. I'm looking down at her while she beams at the camera.

Most of my memories are tangled up with Sophie. Even when I was a child, my favorite memories are when she'd send packages or we'd stay up all night almost talking on the phone. A part of me is scared that these memories will disappear if anything goes wrong with her. It makes me not want to risk anything. But I know I can't continue like this; it wouldn't be fair. It's hard to know the right timing, though, whenever I'm not even sure if she feels anything more than friendship for me.

I let my head fall onto my cherrywood desk, feeling hopeless. In a moment of moping, the sound of heavy footsteps coming into the hallway makes me straighten. Coach Bash stands in front of me wearing a bored expression.

"Hey, Coach Bash, how can I help you?" When the words rush out of her she chuckles.

"I was coming to ask if you wanted to grab lunch together, and I'n

osy anddid. You look like you need to talk.”

ther we I scratch the back of my neck. “Is it that obvious?”

“I heard you groaning from down the hall, then walked in to find yo
gettingplastered to your desk. Those are some strong indicators of a man in
it try toconversation.” He tucks his hands into the pockets of his Georgia Th
aster ofjacket, the kind that they only give out to the coaching staff.

mily in “You’re right, I do need to talk. So I guess lunch would be good.”

s bunny “We could go to the campus diner. I know it’s not the best, but it
of myby.”

aduated The diner is as a diner should be: greasy, sugary, and medio
t one issomeone sober. He and I have gone to a few of the campus restaura
g show.lunch since I started working here, and the diner isn’t my favorite
doesn’t matter that much today with how nervous my stomach is.

is gone, “I don’t know if I’ll be able to eat anyway, so that sounds fine.”

ill night “That bad, huh?”

sour if I get up, pull on my windbreaker, and start to follow him out. “It’s
it I also girl,” I start, and he laughs.

he right “Isn’t it always?” We exit the office building and he leads the way
re than diner. “Did you mess up with your girlfriend?”

“I don’t have a girlfriend.” At least not a *real* one. “But I’d like he
After amine.”

e room He looks at me, confusion threading his brows together. “Who’s tha
emusedall of the photos on your desk? Your sister?”

“No, that’s the girl.” I sigh as we walk up the ramp to the diner. “
of me,my best friend.”

“I see,” he says as he opens the door for both of us. The smell of
a glad Iand grease hits me as soon as I walk in. “So you’re in love with her an

want to hurt your friendship?”

“Not exactly.”

ur head We slide into a slightly sticky booth and peel apart even stickier m
need ofchoose our food. A waitress comes over and takes our drink
rashersinterrupting our conversation.

“So, what is it then?”

“I started falling for her while she was dating someone else, but I c
's closedo anything because I didn't want to ruin their relationship.”

“Good man,” he says, and I nod.

cre for “Thanks. It was especially difficult to be good when the guy was a (
ants forjerk. But I managed, and then they broke up last year around Christma
, but itshe's afraid of being hurt again. She even said she's not going to d
whole year.”

I leave off the fake dating part for now, unsure of how he'll take
scratches the light scruff on his face, looking down at the menus ins
about ame.

“A year without dating? That's rough.” He laughs lightly. “Do yo
y to theyou could wait?”

“I could but things have gotten more complicated recently, making
er to bemore difficult.” I take a deep breath in, but before I can tell him, the v
is back to take our orders. Sebastian orders enough food to explain w
t girl inas broad as he is, while I order a plate of pancakes I'm hoping I can fi
I'm not wasteful.

Sophie, Sebastian eyes me expectantly from across the table once the v
leaves. I take a long drink of water before speaking up again.

☺ coffee “We're fake dating,” I admit, making his eyebrows shoot up in surpr

id don't “What? What does that mean?”

“I’m pretending to be her boyfriend, essentially. Sophie needed a few events to please her mom, and I thought it would be a good way to test toher I’m boyfriend material. But after our first event over the weekend orders,like I’m spiraling. I have no idea how to manage all this pretending v own feelings.”

Sebastian sits back in the booth, crossing his arms with a ponderin wouldn’tAfter a few beats of silence, he straightens.

“Just tell her how you feel,” he says with a shrug, as if it’s the easie in the world.

Class-A “What? No, no, I can’t just tell her. Did you not hear the whol is. Now*heartbroken and swore off men* part?”

ate this He laughs and shakes his head. “I heard you, and *I* say be straightf

Let her know your intentions and see what happens from there.”

eat it. He Our food gets delivered and he dives into his giant stack of Fren instead ofright away.

“What if she responds poorly though?”

u think He looks out the window as he swallows his bite. “Has she given y indication that she might have feelings for you?”

it even I push the side of my fork into my warm pancake stack, butter an waitressmelting over the side. Flashes of moments from the past week come t by he’sbut nothing feels solid enough to hold onto. “There’s been a couple c inish somewhere I thought we were having a moment, but I can’t be sure. We’ve

friends for so long, but we kept all of our relationships out of conve waitressUntil I saw her with her ex, I rarely saw how she was when she liked a

rise. “Well, I guess the question becomes,” he points his fork at me, “: willing to take a risk? I tell my players all the time that risk is trick

ate to acan't just jump into everything; all your risks in life and on the field
o showbe calculated. But if it's worth it, then it's worth it."

l, I feel "Sophie is more than worth it," I say, sure of myself. "But I'm not
with myshe even feels that way about me. I could move too fast for her."

"Tell her she can set the pace," he says as he saws off another mou
g look.French toast. Powdered sugar puffs into the air between us. "Then she
feel as rushed if your feelings are further than hers. But the more you
st thingworse she's going to feel when she finds out, in my opinion. I'd rathe
fast than let her feel manipulated."

e she's Leaning back against the booth, I consider what he's saying. The la
I want to do is hurt Sophie, which is why I've held back in the first pla
orward.maybe by holding back, I'm ensuring she's going to get hurt more.
want her to feel lied to. There's a chance that if I keep hiding my feelin
ch toastend up looking like Michael. The very thought makes my stomach ch
the same time, I need to be sure she feels at least close to the same wa
Sebastian said, my risk needs to be calculated.

ou any "Are you secretly a relationship counselor?" I ask him and he
grabbing a napkin to wipe the sugar off his face.

d syrup "I just look at the bigger picture is all. Take what I'm saying with
o mind,of salt, anyway. I'm not in a relationship, so I might not be the most q
of timesto be giving advice."

ve been "That is surprising. I would think it would be easy to find a woma
rsation.with a career and reputation like yours."

guy." He grimaces and takes a sip of coffee. "It is easy, maybe a little to
are youBut I need someone who can be a mom to Maddie. Someone who se
y. Youthe ESPN version of me and wants to be with the real me in day to c

need to Unfortunately, this line of work makes you susceptible to a manipulation in relationships.”

sure if “Man, I didn’t think about that, that sucks.”

I try to think if I know anyone who would fit that description, but thoughtful of girl who’s single—and not Sophie— that I know of is MJ. Not that M e won’t nice, but she’s definitely on the grumpy side. Sebastian seems more like lie, the get along with a girl like Lottie, if she wasn’t taken. Plus, he is a lot r more than all of the girls. I shrug off the thought. He probably wouldn’t appreciate someone playing matchmaker for him anyway.

st thing “It’s hard, and I’ve been burned in the past, but I try not to let it keep ice. But from going for it again. It comes back to that calculated risk thing I don’t saying earlier. I have a daughter who’s old enough to remember the things, I’ll who come and go now. Old enough to get attached, too. So now I have to turn. At extra careful who I date, but I also can’t live in fear of something going y. Like wrong.”

“That’s a good mindset to have. I can’t imagine having a daughter laughs, trying to date.”

He laughs. “It makes things more interesting, that’s for sure. She’s a grain set me up with several women in the past. Mostly moms of her friends qualified face twists up. “Those ones I’m more hesitant about because I don’t want hurt her friendships if something goes wrong. She always throws in n, what comment back in my face though, saying I have to take risks too. She smart for her own good sometimes.” He shakes his head, but the smile on o easy face tells me he doesn’t mind her antics too much.

es past “She sounds funny,” I say with a smile. “You should bring her into lay life sometime so I can meet her.”

“She comes by on occasion, but she’s old enough to have crushes on

lot of stares at the players too much for my taste. Not that they'd ever do anything like that. She's not even a teenager yet-but she's a little distracting with her wide eyes and drool."

he only I snort and almost choke on a sip of water.

My isn't "Drool?" I cough out through a laugh.

like he'd He smiles and shakes his head. "She'd kill me if she found out I said that. She doesn't drool, but she does ask strange questions. One time she asked me to be defensive back if he got so tall and muscular from eating acai berries, but she heard they were a superfood." He chuckles and I do too.

keep me "She'd get along with Sophie, then. Sophie likes to ask whatever people say. I washed her head in the moment." Which has me wondering if she's ever thought of me as anything other than a friend. Would she have said something? Or would she be hiding it like I am?

going "Well, hopefully you and Sophie will get together and then you can come over to the house for dinner sometime. I'm sure Maddie would love to meet someone new to pepper with questions incessantly."

"Thanks, I hope we can do that."

tried to My whole life seems to be hinging on hope lately. It's not the most realistic feeling in the world. I wish I knew for sure how Sophie would react if I told her the truth. At the very least, I hope she doesn't get mad at me for the risk of not telling her right away. Sebastian is right about telling her though: it's too long to wait much longer without digging myself into a hole I won't be able to get out of.

I just have to sit her down and tell her the truth. The few bites of pasta I was able to eat feel heavy in my stomach. *Tell my best friend I have a crush on her.* No big deal. It's not like we've been friends for two decades and

anything-anything. It's not like losing her would crush me. Everything is going to be fine.

When I'm back in my office later, my phone vibrates against my hand and the screen shows a message from Sophie.

Soph: Saw a gumball machine and thought of you. How about that feeling?

I shake my head at the awful memory of when my suaveness went down the drain.

Bennett: So glad that's what I'm associated with in your brain. I'm doing fine, feeling tired after the weekend.

Soph: I know, me too. I can't believe we have to do it all over again this weekend. At least this one is being held close by. I can't miss an entire weekend of work again.

Bennett: Do you think you'll have time to hang out this week or the next one?

My stomach is in knots thinking about making plans with her, but the more time we spend together the better I'll be able to tell if she has feelings for me. I just have to hold my own in long enough to find out.

Soph: My work schedule is crazy this week, but I can try!

I frown at my screen. I'm not ridiculous enough to want her to cancel on me for me, but I worry that she's working herself too much. I'm sure the pressure of investors looking in on her is hurting more than helping.

Bennett: Make sure you rest, Soph.

Sophie: Don't worry about me, I'll be fine!

Sighing, I lock my phone and set it on my desk. I have a feeling that worrying about Sophie is all I'm going to be doing for a while.

g to be

eg. The

re you

it down

n now.

r **again**

handle

before

ie more

for me.

el plans

ressure

ng that

CHAPTER 12

CHAPTER 12

Sophie Cunningham

In most areas of my life, I feel out of control. Business? Can't get investors to take me seriously. Family? My mother's default setting is disappointment. Love life? My last boyfriend told me I wasn't marriage material. Christmas Eve ... at my best friend's wedding. Yeah, my life looks a lot like those inflatable worm guys they put outside of car dealerships, just being whipped around by the wind, with no way to stop.

But there's one place where I'm always in charge and it never fails to make me feel stable: the kitchen. It doesn't even matter who the kitchen belongs to as soon as I step in it, my insecurities fade like a road sign in a rearview mirror. I'm unmistakably good at what I do, and it's the one area where I don't back down from thinking just that.

So, right now, when my mind is a mess and my world feels like a slipper on top of a wobbly table, my food truck is the best place to be. The sizzle of the fryers, Hayden shouting orders from the front window, customers chatting at picnic tables nearby, all of it combines to make my favorite

“Another sweet and spicy chicken sandwich, extra glaze!” Hayden shouts out and slaps a ticket onto the counter nearby. The lunch rush is coming

close, but there's still a short line out front that will keep us busy for while longer.

I dip my already marinated chicken into the seasoned flour n making sure to thoroughly press the piece in flour so it's perfectly Then I drop it into the hot oil, letting it cook until crispy. While it change gloves and prep the rest of the ingredients. I pull a brioche l and toss it on the warm griddle to heat it up, then I place it in a to-go and drizzle some of my signature spicy sweet glaze on it. Once the chi done, I dip it in a bowl of the glaze and throw it on top, and it dri flavor. I place two thick sliced pickles on top and set it on the pick up stors toto the right of Hayden, slapping the bell nearby so he knows it's there. ntment. My back is aching and my feet sting, but I can't stop. Throwing ... on into my work is the only way to forget about the pain of long days. I a wholeout on last weekend to go to that ridiculous gala for my mother set n ps: I'm on my financial goals for the month, so I need to work twice as hard l of it. I've gotten a lot of recognition for my work, but missing a week to make big deal in this business.

ongs to, Pushing through the pain and fatigue, I keep making meals until earview only one ticket left on the counter. Hayden sits on the stool by the w I won't reading a book, so I know that means we're about to be done for the d. this last meal. I make the order and place it on the counter, deciding pinning the number out myself since it's the last one.

ng heat "129!" I yell out the window, and before I turn back around, I see l stomers leaning against a tree, smiling at me. He walks up and my heart sk song. looks extra handsome today. Ever since the ball a few days ago, I've fi shout spin pricks of attraction each time I've thought of him in that suit. It w ing to a hard for any woman not to with how gorgeous he was. Today he's

a little black jeans, a dark green t-shirt, and a corduroy jacket. But his clothes
what make my heart pitter-patter; it's that smile that could chase
mixture, rainstorm.

coated. "That's me," he says with a grin and grabs the basket containing
cooks I chicken burrito with a side of spicy glaze.

run out "What are you doing here?" I ask, unable to keep the joy out of my
basket even if I wanted to. I shouldn't feel this way, but that moment in his
kitchen has had me feeling off-kilter. It's another area to add to the
messy things in my life, I suppose. We've been flirty and close, but it
counter and what isn't fake is just friendship. I need to get that through my head.

"I got a text alert that your truck was parking near the university
myself thought I'd swing by and try to catch you after the crowd left." It should
make me feel all warm and gooey inside that he signed up for my
back program, but it does.

because "That's sweet of you, thanks Ben."

and is a "Do you have time to hang out? I'll split my burrito with you. I have
the best in the city." He winks and a flush of heat hits my face. I hope
there's can't tell with how red my face must be from the hot fries and cold Florida
window, air.

ay after "I think we're done for the day anyway, so sure," I say before turning
to call Hayden. "Can you close down for me?"

He looks up from his book and nods. "You got it, Chef."

Bennett "Thanks, Hayhay," I say with a grin, and he scowls at me. I
lips. He nicknames on him occasionally, he's never liked any of them.

elt little "Come on, that was a good one!" I laugh. He grunts in response.
ould be away my gloves and hang my apron on the hook near the exit. Hayden
got on

s aren't about the trailer in his usual gruff way, but I know he's not actually away from me. He just suffers from resting grump face. I don't take it personally.

"Hayhay?" Bennett questions when I step out next to him. Sometimes his voice is off, but I can't quite tell what.

"I like messing with him since he's so grouchy." We walk over to a table in the sun nearby. On a summer day, this table would be the last place I'd want to go, but the warmth of the light is more than welcome in this kind of weather.

It's fake, "So you're close then?" I sit down across from him and study his expression. He looks close to how Hayden does on the daily.

Why, so I "We work together, so yes, we're in close proximity," I say, tilting my head to the side. "Are you jealous?"

Why alert Bennett's eyes widen and he starts to sputter. "Jealous? Of him?"

"You're so jealous!" I laugh at the thought. "You know you're my friend, Ben. My work friend will never come before you."

Why it's "Friend, yeah, that makes sense," he says, almost to himself while he unwraps the burrito.

February "If it makes you feel any better, I wouldn't let anyone else be my boyfriend."

Why to He laughs at my words, but it comes out forced, making me frown.

"Good to know." He avoids my eyes and cuts the burrito in half with a plastic knife before sliding the basket into the middle of the table. Steam rises from the burrito and the sight makes my stomach growl. After working my feet for so long, I'm starving.

I throw "Everything okay?" I ask as I grab half of the burrito. Taking a bite and moving it, I close my eyes and savor the recipe I perfected over a year ago. Use

mad at get tired of my menu staples, but when I'm hungry like this it tastes like
the very first time I made it.

hing in “Yeah, I was just thinking, are you busy tonight?”

I take another bite and nod. “MJ and I are hanging out tonight. She
a picnic me to go to some art gallery opening with her. Her ex might be there,
st place wants backup. He's one of the dramatic ones, and she's worried he'll
winterscene.” Bennett's face falls slightly before he masks the emotion, but
“Why do you ask?”

idy his “I figured you might be feeling down because it's Valentine's
thought we could hang out, but having plans is good! You and MJ were
ing my fun.”

“I forgot that was today! Lottie usually decorates the whole townhouse
she isn't there anymore so it's easy to forget without a boyfriend.” I
ny best “Probably for the best I didn't remember.”

“Yeah, I'm glad you weren't upset today.”

hile he “Me too. If I wouldn't have already committed to this gallery thing
hang out with you though. Look at you, being a thoughtful fake boyfriend
ny fake “I try,” he says with a wry smile. “I guess I'll give you your present
then. Let me grab it from my car.”

“Present? You didn't have to do that, Ben.” He shrugs like it was no
with about my heart picks up speed as he jogs off toward his car. Valentine's
m rises presents aren't something we've ever done, and I didn't think
king unnecessary for a fake relationship.

He comes back toting a red bag with black tissue paper poking out
e out of top. I quickly wipe my hands on a napkin whenever he sets it on the table.
ually, I “I feel bad that I didn't get you anything,” I say and he shakes his head.
“I wanted it to be a surprise. Just open it.” He gestures to the bag

close to smile. I pull out the paper and Bennett takes it so the wind doesn't
away. I pull out the gift and gasp. It's a black t-shirt that's been dis
with bleach, and on the front is my Airstream with my food truck
e wants Farm-To-Truck, written beneath it.

, so she "Do you like it?" he asks and I bite the inside of my cheek to keep n
make aat bay. Crying over a t-shirt would be too much, but it's one of the s
I see it. gifts I've ever gotten. Bennett gets me, he just does.

"I love it!" I squeal and he chuckles. I climb out of the picnic table
Day. I over to hug him. He wraps me up in his arms, his familiar scent and
ill have arms almost bringing my tears to the surface. I pull back and look up

"Thank you." His smile is warm, and I swear I see attraction in his ga
use, but *he always looked at me this way?*

I laugh. "You're welcome, Soph." His voice is low, sending tingles do
spine. I step out of his arms, letting the cold air shock me back to my s

I cannot develop a crush on Ben again. That's a tragedy waiting to l
ing, I'd

end."

ent now



"So if he's here, what are the chances he hands you his cut-off ear ton
nothing, ask MJ as we click-clack across the parking lot in our heels to the galle
entine's She cuts her eyes to me. "Does your knowledge of art history co
it was that one Van Gogh fact?"

"Of course not, I also know that Salvador Dali once filled up a c
t of the cauliflower and drove to Paris to give a lecture. But cauliflower seem
ble. romantic than an ear."

ead. "Your idea of romance is demented." She opens the door to the gall
; with a warm air inside carrying the scent of patchouli and berries.

blow it “Artists are weird, MJ, so their romance has to be too. I live with (stressedknow.” She shoots me a glare, but I see the smile touching the edge of name,lips.

“All sorts of people are weird, not just artists,” she says quietly as v ay tearstoward the first piece nearby. Light music consisting mostly of wind weetestplays, and the people around are wearing various kinds of dress cloth been to a handful of these things with MJ, and they all seem the and runBlandly dressed people look at strange art pieces for an hour, ther l strongmillions of dollars to hang them in one of their twelve guest bedroo at him.never look at them again.

ze. Has “Speaking of weird,” I mumble as we approach the large painting h under a spotlight. It’s a completely black canvas with the smallest do wn myin the center. The title card reads *Red Eye Flight*. “Your friend painted enses. I ask her and she shakes her head.

appen. “No, Gillian works with clay. This is Vander Cleo’s work. His st contrast is very popular right now.”

“I’m so glad you don’t do stuff like this,” I say, and she breathe laugh, trying to keep quiet. We move on to the next display. This ight?” I violent yellow shade that feels like it’s burning my retinas. It’s aptl ery. Sun.

nsist of “Why don’t you put your work in a gallery?” I ask. “I’m certain would buy every single one if only because they’re thankful that ar withdifferent from that Cleo guy.”

ied less She ducks her head, hiding a smile, and walks to the back of the where some clay sculptures are displayed on pedestals. “I don’t want t ery, theit about other people and their opinion. Art is my escape, I don’t want that.”

one, I'd I look at the clay sculpture closest to us. It resembles the ocean, of her cresting and colliding. It's actually pleasing to look at, though it's not beat the yellow highlighter explosion we previously viewed. "That we startsense. This investor stuff has been hard lately. It's not like someone lchimesmy food and not enjoying it. They're looking at my dream and saying es. I've worth anything."

same. "Who cares what the people who said no think? You just have to d 1 spendit's worth it. If so, keep pushing."

ms and I smile at how she gives advice with her brusque nature.

"It is worth it, that's why I'm going through all of this with Benne ranging gift today comes to mind, making my stomach flip.

t of red "How's that going?" We walk around the display, keeping our c d this?" from the other onlookers as best we can. The small gallery makes it c to occupy the same space comfortably, but there's not so many people udy on that it's impossible.

"It's been fine, just a little weird. Sometimes Bennett gives me the s out at that..." I trail off, shaking my head. "It's probably nothing."

one a "Sounds like *you* think it's something. Are you breaking the mar y titled Her tiny smirk hints that she's teasing me.

"There are just these little moments that seem more than friends, bu people fake dating. That's bound to happen, right?"

they're "I wouldn't know." She shrugs. "You know Bennett best—does like he's been different with you? Enough to question his feelings?"

gallery, My mind wanders as we circle through the gallery. The clay sculptu o make the only thing worth looking at, but I use each painting as an opportu : to lose think, hoping I look like I'm pondering the art itself. There's been pl times where we've gotten close lately, but we've never been afraid of

waves close or hugging. Maybe the fake dating aspect has that heightened.
hard to just us, with another layer added.

makes “I don’t think there’s enough to worry about,” I say, and MJ simply
not questioning me anymore. I’m grateful for her silence, because I
it’s not she pushed any more I might overthink and feel something I shouldn’t
that before with Michael.

decide if I can’t make that mistake again.

tt.” His

distance

difficult

in here

he looks

ban?”

it we’re

it seem

ures are

unity to

enty of

f sitting

close or hugging. Maybe the fake dating aspect has that heightened. So it's just us, with another layer added.

“I don't think there's enough to worry about,” I say, and MJ simply nods, not questioning me anymore. I'm grateful for her silence, because I think if she pushed any more I might overthink and feel something I shouldn't. I did that before with Michael.

I can't make that mistake again.

CHAPTER 13

CHAPTER 13

Bennett St. James

“If you say a *word* about my appearance,” Sophie calls through her bedroom door, “I will fill your bathtub with snails. Those things have hundreds of babies!”

I choke on the coconut water I stole from the fridge. After clearing my throat, I respond. “Soph, just come out here.” Sophie didn’t have two weeks to find a new gown, but Lottie had an old pageant dress from school that she gave to her. She wouldn’t take any of the gowns from her mother on principle.

The door clicks and slowly opens to reveal a mountain of pink tulle sparkles swallowing Sophie’s figure. The bodice is covered in crystals and the tulle skirt that flows from her waist shimmers in the light, flecks of silver embedded in the fabric. I press my lips together hard to keep my jealousy in check.

On Lottie, this dress would be perfect. She’d float around like she owned the entire earth. But on Sophie, it looks like someone forced her into the dress in some sort of hostage situation. Her arms are crossed, her brow furrowed in anger.

“I look ridiculous.”

“No.” I choke down my laughter. “Y-you look beautiful.” And she looks at me but the dress and her frustration combined are comical.

“Let’s just go.” She huffs and stomps toward the door, her heel clicking against the hardwood floors. I follow her out then move ahead to open the door.

“Your chariot, Princess Cupcake,” I say, and she swats my arm while squeezing into the passenger seat. Her dress skirt pokes out in the wrong direction. It seems like it’s growing bigger by the second.

“Ryan Gosling wouldn’t call me a cupcake,” she grumbles, trying to buckles the seatbelt over her torso to no avail.

“I’ll get it.” I duck my head inside the car. “He probably would, and you’d like to see how I do it.” She rolls her eyes at me. I take the seatbelt from her hand, our fingers brushing.

“Besides,” I say and start pushing at the tulle fabric to find the buckle. “I’ll find it, I push the seatbelt in with a grunt of effort. “I called you *Princess Cupcake*, because I’m a chivalrous fake boyfriend.”

I start to move out of the car, but our eyes lock, making me freeze. Her smile is on her lips—which are painted in gloss tonight—and there’s something in her gaze that makes my breath hitch. The amber ring surrounding her pupils is more evident in the golden hour light, and it creates a mesmerizing warmth that draws me to her.

“Thank you,” she says quietly. “You’re a good fake boyfriend, even if you do compare me to baked goods.”

“You’re welcome.” I should move, but I can’t bring myself to. Her smile is stronger since we’re so close, and she smells like fresh flowers. Her throat sets my jaw, the movement drawing my eye to the base of her throat. I wonder if I pressed my lips there if it would be like kissing a rose petal.

“Ben? Is everything okay?” Her soft voice makes my eyes jump.

e does, her face.

“Everything’s fine!” I clear my throat and pull my head out quickly. I do something stupid like kiss her. I shove in the remainder of her car that it doesn’t stick out the door then jog around the front of the car to

There are a few beats of silence as I start the car and adjust the air before it’s warm enough. The night air has some bite to it, and Sophie’s shoulders are exposed. A fact I desperately need to ignore if I want to be able to drive on the road.

“My mother is going to be ecstatic when she sees me.” Sophie breathes in silence, sounding like the idea is physically painful.

“Isn’t the goal to please her, in a way?” I pull out of the driveway and push on the road.

“I don’t even know anymore. I need her approval for the catering gig. My mother also hates the idea of needing her at all.”

“I know your relationship is...” I trail off, a million words flitting through my small brain.

“Toxic?” Sophie replies cheerfully.

“Strenuous,” I try instead. “But you agreed to this deal of hers, so once you were okay with it.”

“The ends justify the means, Ben.” She shifts in her seat and massages her shoulders. “I need her connections.”

“And no part of you simply wants to prove to her that you’re not just a daughter? A successful woman who she can be proud of?”

“Why would you think that?” Her face twists up like she’s wondering something bad, but something in her tone says I’m close to the truth.

I make a turn before responding. “Because I’ve known you your whole life. Even when you rebelled against her, you still wanted her love.”

approval deep down.”

before She’s quiet for a moment, and I’m worried I’ve hurt her feelings.

dress so “You just had to go and pull the lifelong friendship card, huh?” She
get in. “I guess I’m torn in a way. Not to sound too existential, but I feel like
so that know who I am sometimes. Either I’m the rebel child or I’m the golden
oulders The disappointment or the shining accolade. I choose which to be dep
o focus on the day. I don’t know who I am outside of those two extremes some

Her words and voice breaks my heart. I know I can’t have this conversation
aks the and not be able to look at her, so I veer off into a restaurant parking lot

“What are you doing?” she asks when I take my seatbelt off. I sit
nd start body to face her better. The hopeless look she wears distracts from
extravagant dress she has on.

g, but I “Sophie, you are so much more than how she sees you,” I say and
her shrink in on herself slightly.

through “Ben, please, I don’t need a pep talk. I’m a big girl.”

“I know, but you’re wrong about some things. I can’t go into that business
you when you don’t know the truth.”

in some “Your opinion isn’t the truth,” she says, shooting me a look.

“Today my opinion happens to line up with the truth. So be careful
hes her Cupcake, or else I’m taking a photo of you like this and sending it out
our friends.”

a good She narrows her eyes at me, then mimes locking her lips and then
away the key.

smelled “Good girl,” I say and she rolls her eyes, but a blush creeps up her

“Now, back to what I was saying. You aren’t confined to these two images
: whole yourself. Trying to put your personality in a box is like trying to put
ve and

white shark in a fish bowl: it just doesn't work. You deserve more space than that."

I sigh. I reach over and grab one of her hands.

I don't "Sophie, you are kind, beautiful, business savvy, and an absolute man child." She tries to smother a smile but fails. "Would you let any pending people you love think this way about themselves?"

days." "No," she whispers, her slate gray eyes glassy with unshed tears.

conversation "Then you know it's not good for you to think this way. I know

Whitney treats you, and it must be hard to go through that, but you can't let my words dictate your life. Whether that looks like rebelling against her or going along with what she wants. Your choices need to be based on what you want, not in reaction to her desires."

I watch "Stop making sense," she says, then snuffles.

"I love you, Sophie," I say, and something shifts within me, like tectonic plates moving into place, and it shakes me to my core. Those three words all with beginning to mean something different than they used to. I push the words down to keep talking. "And because of that, I have to tell you the hard truth. You don't need this deal with your mom to be successful. But if you do want it, quiet, do it, I'll be here by your side."

it to all "I love you too, Bennett." That seismic feeling comes back, reminding me that what Sophie is saying is likely no longer the same as what I heard her saying growing up. It's amazing how a simple phrase can mean so much based on the hearer. I nod at the person saying it. "Thank you for telling me all this, I needed to hear it. I don't think I do need this deal, still. I need the investors. I will keep in mind the images of stuff about my mom, though."

a great I sigh and nod. "Alright, then let's go." I get back on the road and drive toward the venue. I know one conversation can't help Sophie, so I just

ice than to hope that me being by her side is enough.

We arrive at the venue, and I reach over the console to unbuckle Sophie's seatbelt. She keeps her gaze focused out the window though, so I can't read how she's feeling. After tossing my keys to the valet, I open the door for her and she practically rolls herself out of the car in her dress.

Her frustration has melted away however, and she laughs at the sight of me. Her whole demeanor seems lighter now, making me feel better too. Although how I want to know that Sophie feels the same way I do, I want her to be happy and not let me down. So if that meant calling off the fake relationship and going home, then I would have been ready to do that.

But now that we're here, hope is rising like the sun within me. Tonight will show me something that I can hold onto whenever I confess my feelings to her. She grasps my hand tight as we walk up the stairs to the penthouse building. I'm sure it's because she's worried about falling, but it brings a smile to my face all the same. *I'm* who she's holding onto. The only feeling I'm confident in. That has to mean something.

Our entrance into the ballroom is quiet and unsuspecting, making Sophie's shoulders sag in relief. This ball is much more modern than the last one I've been to, held in a corporate building. The tables are decorated with square vases containing disproportionately tall gold branches poking out of them. It looks like they were trying to be edgy but settled for gaudy instead.

"Let's hope the decorations aren't an indicator of how our night is going to be," Sophie says and I laugh.

"How do rich people have so much money and so little taste?"

Sophie shakes her head. "It's the eighth wonder of the world."

"Sophie? Is that really you?" Whitney walks up to us. Sophie looks visibly nervous, and I pull her into my side to offer reassurance. She gives

grateful look.

Sophie's "Hey, Mom," she says while looking down.

I can't tell. Resentment toward Whitney burns in my chest, but I know that's not healthy for her. It doesn't solve anything, but I can't help feeling protective.

Sophie and I are upset at how she's been treated her whole life.

"I can't believe you're wearing something in your color palette. It's so much season and looks like a costume, but it's not black! How wonderful."

I pull Sophie closer.

"Is that supposed to be a compliment?" I ask, and Whitney's eyes move over to me.

Maybe "Yes," she sneers. "To my *daughter*, whom I was addressing."

"Thanks, Mom," Sophie speaks up, making me glance down in surprise. I hope you have a nice evening. I think I see someone I need to speak to. I gently tug me away from a stunned Whitney Cunningham.

"What was that all about?" I ask her as she pulls us toward the tables.

"I figured the best way to get out of it was to throw her off guard. It's not as if it's enough time to make a break."

"You're right, but I was prepared to go to bat for you just so you know," she says. She laughs and stops in front of a table with a chocolate fountain.

"I know you were, but it would have just made things worse. So I'm going to drown my issues in chocolate and avoid her for the rest of the night."

Sophie picks up a big red strawberry and slides it under the waterfall of chocolate.

"Sounds like a solid plan."

She lifts the strawberry to her mouth and takes a bite. My eyes are glued to the movement. When she pulls the strawberry top away and a line of chocolate comes out, she looks at me and

flows from her lips down her chin, a fire could break out across the room. I wouldn't even notice.

at isn't "You've got a little-" I gesture to her mouth. She giggles and swipes her thumb over her lips before licking it off. I think my brain short circuits.

"Ben?" The sound of my name breaks the trance.

s out of "Hm?"

"Do you want a strawberry?"

I'd rather see if your lips taste like them, I think and then yank my eyes away from that thought pattern.

"No!" I say a little too aggressively, making her jump. "I mean, not you." I grab a graham cracker piece, dip it in the chocolate, then take a bite. "I whole thing to keep my mouth busy."

o." She *Get it together, Ben.*

"You're being extra weird tonight." She laughs. "It's entertaining. Keep eating buffet so keep it up."

I fake a smile while attempting to swallow the sandy graham cracker. I bought a champagne flute from a server's tray as he walks by and drink the whole thing in one sip.

ow." "Okay I said *weird*, not *wild*," Sophie remarks, staring at me like I'm on it. "A few marbles, which I am. Several pieces of my brain must be rolling on the ballroom floor after seeing her eat that strawberry. I am a weirdo." She tonight, and all nights when it comes to her.

late. "That's my first and only," I assure her. "Just needed to wash the cracker down. Don't recommend eating those, they're very dry."

glued to She nods but eyes me as if I might jump on top of the table or some of the juice. I don't blame her.

Suddenly, the chocolate fountain starts slowing down and gaps appear.

om and the chocolate.

“Of course this thing would break. It’s like this place knows I’m having a problem and has to put a stop to it.” She pouts, and I frown too.

ts. “Maybe something is wrong with the cord. I’ll check.” I go around the buffet display and see a variety of cords, but the one leading to the chocolate fountain table is partially undone.

As I’m walking in that direction, my foot catches, and I start to fall. My self-outsheer instinct, I reach out to grab a hold of something. My hand grabs a piece of white fabric and yanks it down with me. I hit the ground with an *oof*, but I’m sure it wasn’t heard due to the objects crashing down around me. I pick myself up from the floor, groaning. My groan gives way to a shocked intake of breath, though, when I see what table I ruined.

The chocolate fountain is tipped over and splattered everywhere. My head turns, though, to travel from the machine to Sophie, who’s standing there in shock. Chocolate stains her dress and droplets of it are on her chest and face. I scramble to get up. I feet and around the front of the display. I can feel the eyes of everyone on us.

“Are you okay?” I ask and Sophie nods, her mouth open in an ‘o’.

m short A woman with a clipboard rushes over, worry and anger all over her face. She attempts to mask it when she reaches us, no doubt understanding that we’re guests which means she has to cater to us.

“I’m so sorry. I was trying to fix the machine and then I tripped and fell.”

graham The woman lifts a hand, sharing a tight smile. “Don’t worry about it, sir. My team will have this cleaned up in no time. Next time though you have something, I remind you that we have event staff who handle the food and machines. You are welcome to find an employee to assist you.”

appear in I look down at my dress shoes.

“Yes, ma’am,” I mumble, feeling thoroughly chastised. I des
ppy andbecause even though it was an accident, she’s right. The woman powe
away, and I chance a look at Sophie. Her lips are pressed together lik
and theholding back laughter.

ocolate I narrow my eyes at her. “We should probably get out of here,” I s
she nods enthusiastically, covering her mouth as a giggle escapes. I k
. Out ofhead down as we walk through the crowd, not wanting to meet ar
lips theeyes. My family isn’t here tonight, but I know they’ll call in the mor
but I’mmake fun of me. I’m going to hear about this for the rest of my life.

ush up The doors shut behind us, the cool night air biting at my skin. S
f breathlaughter bursts out of her and she doubles over.

“That-that was *amazing*.” She can barely get the words out she’s la
ly eyesso hard.

ocolate “I’m so glad you think my humiliation is hilarious. What about n
e to myYou didn’t even ask if I was okay.”

ne here “Are you?” she asks, amusement glittering in her eyes like starlight.

“I think I pulled something in my leg.” That unlocks her laughter
and I leave her on the steps while I tell the valet to get my car. I ston
er face.up the stairs and grab her hand to help her back down.

ng that “Come on, Ben, laugh a little! It was comedic perfection.”

I twist my mouth to keep from laughing, but her persistent giggles h
–” succumb to my own quickly. When the valet pulls up, we’re both in sti
a thing, “We have to calm down,” I say before another round of laughter. I t
l, I willkeys from the wary valet and open the door for Sophie. She falls in,
es. Youas her laughter begins to subside some.

I lean in to help her again, and after I click the seatbelt in, our eye
just like they did before we came. Except this time, only the dim overh

erve it, light illuminates Sophie's face. It makes it feel like we're more alone t
r walks actually are. I reach up and swipe at some chocolate in the corner
e she's mouth.

"I guess this would make you a chocolate cupcake," I tease, and s
ay, and to look put out by the joke but fails. Her eyes fall to my lips for a m
eep my then spring back up as if she realized what she was doing. It takes ev
yone's reserve of my willpower to pull myself out of the car and shut the doo
ning to *we need to go slow*.

My heart is already careening downhill toward love, though. That s
ophie's desire in Sophie is the push I need to tell her the truth. Maybe soo
these *almost* moments will give way to a true moment. And mayb
ughing maybe, I'll get to kiss my best friend.

ny fall?

again,
p back

ave me
itches.
ake the
sighing

es meet
lead car

light illuminates Sophie's face. It makes it feel like we're more alone than we actually are. I reach up and swipe at some chocolate in the corner of her mouth.

"I guess this would make you a chocolate cupcake," I tease, and she tries to look put out by the joke but fails. Her eyes fall to my lips for a moment, then spring back up as if she realized what she was doing. It takes every last reserve of my willpower to pull myself out of the car and shut the door. *Slow, we need to go slow.*

My heart is already careening downhill toward love, though. That spark of desire in Sophie is the push I need to tell her the truth. Maybe soon all of these *almost* moments will give way to a true moment. And maybe, just maybe, I'll get to kiss my best friend.

CHAPTER 14

CHAPTER 14

Sophie Cunningham

Fake dating is stupid. So very, very stupid. Why did I agree to this?

I peel off Lottie's gown, the layers of tulle shimmering as the dress falls on the floor. Bennett is in the living room waiting for me to get cleaned up. He survived the chocolate disaster mostly unscathed, minus his suit jacket which is hanging on the back of the couch right now. I, however, did not. As well. Not only am I covered in chocolate, but I can't breathe properly because I'm pretty sure Bennett was going to kiss me tonight. And I was going to *let him*.

I wrap my fluffy robe around myself, knowing it's going to have to be washed now because of the chocolate all over me and pick out some pajamas from my dresser. Various tattered t-shirts and threadbare leggings stare at me, taunting me with their ugliness. A few weeks ago, I'd throw on whatever my hand touched first and not think twice about it. But now, Bennett is just my best friend, but my fake boyfriend. My *extremely attractive* boyfriend wearing a suit.

I scowl at the clothes, upset that I'm even thinking this way. It's E for goodness' sake. I snatch up a random t-shirt and pair of leggings, r

to give in to the idea that I need to dress any other way. He's seen me worse than this, for one. And for two, he's not my real boyfriend. Nor ever be. This whole fake dating fiasco just has my feelings clouded, though.

I poke my head out my bedroom door, peeking out to see if Bennett left the living room. My bathroom is down the hall, and I don't want to run into him before I can get there. The robe I'm wearing is more grand than vixen-like, but I still don't think I could handle running into him like this.

When I deem the coast clear, I speed walk into the bathroom and slam the door behind me, breathing a sigh of relief. I'm being dramatic, but my heart is fraying. How do I reconcile what I thought of Bennett with the man who's been my poolside companion the past few weeks? The one who holds me close, flirts with me, and sends me shivers down my spine with enough heat in his gaze to cause a kitchen fire.

I turn the shower on and double-check that there's a towel in here. I don't want to get myself with toilet paper before I asked Bennett to grab me a towel. I'm properly relieved when I find a stack of towels on the shelf above the toilet, so I don't think I have to resort to that.

The blazing hot water of the shower burns my back when I step in, so I don't turn the heat down. I need the extra heat to sear tonight out of my mind before it becomes a core memory. High school Sophie is already planning her wedding in that awful notebook of hers. Practicing her calligraphy with whatever writing drafts of her vows. But present me is very much aware that it is not Bennett who would be a terrible idea.

I scrub chocolate off my skin while I ponder. He's never had a serious relationship, which means that I'd be his first. I want to write him off as immature, that reason, but my heart won't let me. Bennett isn't immature; he's just refusing to make some girl incredibly happy one day. *Would it be so bad if you were*

much *girl*? The thought floats through my brain but I wave it away, hoping it will disperse along with the shower steam.

It doesn't matter if I want to be more than a friend to Bennett, because he doesn't feel the same. He'd tell me if he did. At least I'd hope that whatever I'm seeing in Bennett must be our fake relationship blurring the lines, something all the girls warned me about. And my feelings are from just the same thing, too. Once this is all over we'll go back to normal. There's no more handholding or wiping chocolate from my mouth. We'll shut the friends, as we should be.

I try not to think too hard about why that thought makes my chest ache. Instead, I focus on getting every bit of chocolate off my skin and out of my hair. Once my skin is dry out of the shower, I pull on my ratty pajamas and twist my hair up in the towel. I don't let myself wipe away the condensation on the mirror to analyze my reflection. I simply open the door, step out, and walk to the living room. Bennett is sprawled on the couch, but he sits up when he sees me.

"Better?" he asks with a warm smile on his face.

"Much," I reply and sit on the far end of the couch, tucking my legs under me. Bennett must have removed his tie while I was in the shower because it's gone from his neck now. He's also unbuttoned the top few buttons of his shirt, making him look like a debonair spy ready to save me if I'm in distress. Ugh, curse my foolish romantic heart and Lottie's love of romance movies! Now I'm picturing him scaling a building with me holding on to him. The look in his eyes the same as when he was leaning over me in the car just for help with my seatbelt.

"Soph, you good?" Bennett's voice yanks me out of my movie reverie and a blush heats my face. *Oh, this is bad.*

it will “I’m fine!” I squeak, making Bennett raise his eyebrows. The increases his flirty secret agent look, making my skin flush even more because he goes to look as red as the tomatoes I buy from the farmer’s market so so. No, “Okay,” he drags out the last syllable, eyeing me for a moment. “I’m going to check your Netflix account and saw a couple of things saved for you tomorrow. What are you feeling, a romcom or a true crime doc?”

“True crime, definitely,” I say, trying not to let my relief leak into my voice. There’s no way I could handle a romantic comedy right now. I sink into this couch out of embarrassment.

“Weird serial killer documentary it is,” he says and clicks on the movie. Soon after it starts, my feet start to hurt beneath me, so I shift to try and be more comfortable. After working all week and then wearing heels tonight, my feet are beyond sore. I’d put them on the coffee table, but it’s not that comfortable, and there are books and plants all over it.

“Why don’t you put your feet in my lap so you can stretch out?” Bennett’s offer is sweet, and the discomfort I’m feeling forces me to accept. I’m probably going to regret putting myself closer to him later, but right now it’s either this or kick him out so I can go to bed. I use it—some clingy part of me—probably high school Sophie—doesn’t want to let go of his leave yet.

I tuck a throw pillow under my head, grab a blanket, and then lay my feet across his lap, immediately feeling better. Once I’m situated, I turn my attention fully on the documentary, trying to ignore how warm Bennett’s feet feel under my feet. My attempt at ignorance is futile though because he is determined to torture me. Suddenly, one of my feet is in his hand, and he’s kneading it in a way that has me biting my cheek to hold back my reactions.

is only “Ben, you don’t need to do that,” I breathe out, pulling on my fingers. I’m grips it firmly, giving me a playful but stern look that sends ripples on. awareness through me.

I pulled “You deserve a little pampering, Soph. You work too hard. Just relax.” watch.starts massaging again, rendering me incapable of speech, much less my ability to fight him. It’s hard to focus on the documentary, so I don’t get into my. Instead, I watch Bennett in the flickering light of the TV. He moves his foot, and I barely stifle a moan when he hits a particularly tender spot.

His hands work the spot expertly, and it occurs to me that he likely learned these techniques in school. There are women out there who dream of a handsome doctor in a suit rubbing their feet. It’s a worthwhile fantasy to discover.

This is the kind of fantasy that I wouldn’t mind fulfilling more often. A line of thought is dangerous, though. Seeing Bennett taking care of my feet is creating a soft spot, a chink in my armor, and I’m worried that if all goes wrong I’ll end up devastated. I should have fought him more, but I have pulled my feet back and told him he was crossing a line, but I didn’t. And now I’m thinking of what could be, all the while knowing this can only hurt me.

If there’s anything the whole breakup with Michael taught me, it’s that I can’t trust my own judgment. I thought he was going to propose, and instead he laughed in my face and insulted me. Maybe there have been a few good moments with Ben, but I can’t let it go to my head. If he really felt sorry for me, he’d admit it. He wouldn’t hide it from me while being my boyfriend.

“Is it true that pressure points in the foot connect to everywhere in the body?” I ask, trying to think of something else other than romance.

oot. He Bennett chuckles. "Some holistic professionals think that, but I don't
ples of if it's true. I didn't learn about it in school if that's what you're asking
fingers move up to my ankle, rolling his thumbs over it, making me cl
ax." Heeyes.

ess the "So it's just hippie stuff?"

bother. "That's one way to say it."

s to my "I think it's true." My voice hitches when his hand finds the back
er spot.calf and begins rubbing it.

learned "What makes you say that? Am I detoxing your kidneys by ma
f this, a your feet?" He jokes as he slides his hand up and down my calf.

sy, I'm "I don't know about that, but I do feel much better than I did e
think you should quit your fancy surgeon job and do this," I mumble
n. That muscles relax and sleep begins to sound like a very good idea.

me this "That's a lot of med school hours to have gone through to give up
t if this for massage therapy."

should "Good point." I hum as he starts on my other calf. "You can do this
didn't.me then. Forever."

nly end He laughs and I smile, feeling like my movements are happening
motion.

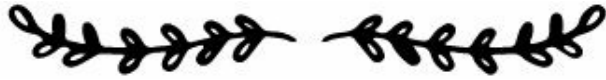
s that I "Deal."

instead, My eyelids feel heavy like someone is pushing them down. M
heated chooses this time to ask a question I've worried about for a few year
nothing "Do you think we'll be friends like this forever?"

y 'fake Deep down, I know the answer is no. One or both of us will find so
and they won't like that Bennett buys me Valentine's gifts and rubs r
: in the They won't like that I know all his favorite foods or that he knows w
clothes I wear. We'll grow apart, maybe even lose each other. I know

't know true, which is why Bennett's response makes my heart ache even as I s
g." His the dream world.

ose my "I sure hope so, Soph."



of my The sound of voices brings me reluctantly to consciousness. Blinkin
my eyes, I squint against the light pouring in. I'm warm and though I
ssaging wake up sore after working all week, I don't today. It's only when I
the ceiling above me is different than the one in my room that I reme
arlier. I fell asleep out here.

as my "Sophie," Grace whispers, making me startle. I twist and see her s
behind the couch with wide eyes. "You have five seconds to get
surgery kitchen and tell us what's going on!" She hisses and my brows
together in confusion. Until I shift my feet and freeze. My feet aren'
for just because I curled them into my blankets. No, they're warm because c
the end of the couch sits Bennett, with my feet in his lap still. His
in slow leaned back, his mouth partially open as he sleeps sitting up.

I slowly pull my feet away from him and then scramble up, rushi
the kitchen where MJ, Grace, and Lottie have convened. I run a shakin
y heart through my hair. Last night... I almost kissed Bennett. He gave
rs now. *massage*. Then we slept together. Kind of. Enough of a kind of t
freaking out, as are all of my wide-eyed best friends.

me one, "Are you two a thing now?" Lottie begins the inquisition in whi
ny feet. tones to not wake Ben.

hat size "No, we're not. We just fell asleep watching a movie last night is all

is this is "With your feet in his lap?" Grace sounds skeptical.

slip into “That doesn’t mean anything. It’s not a big deal,” I try to reassure
and myself.

“He could have left at any time, Sophie. He slept sitting up
mediocre couch because he wanted to be near you,” Lottie says and the
girls nod.

“I’m sure he was just too tired to drive.” None of them look like
they’re buying it, which is fair. I wouldn’t buy it if I was them.

usually “Honey,” Lottie says in her sweet southern way, placing a hand
see that arm. “This doesn’t look fake to me.” Panic builds in me like steam
ember I boiling kettle.

“We’re best friends, all of this is just the fake dating messing it up.
standing feel that way about Bennett,” I lie. “And he doesn’t feel that way about
in the he did, he’d tell me. I know he would.”

weave Lottie averts her gaze and steps away from me. “You know him better
t warm me,” she says and I nod. Yes, I know Bennett. That should be a comfort
lown at me. I know him well enough to be certain all of this isn’t real. It’ll go
head is once we’re done with the plan.

Except ... I don’t really know what Bennett looks like when he’s push-
ing into someone, do I? He’s never done it before. Tendrils of confusion push
ing hand what I thought I knew, like tree roots encroaching on the foundation
of me a building. I’m worried that what I’ve built my case on, why I’ve said all
that I’m that Bennett and I won’t work, is beginning to crumble beneath me.

spering

l.”

“That doesn’t mean anything. It’s not a big deal,” I try to reassure them and myself.

“He could have left at any time, Sophie. He slept sitting up on our mediocre couch because he wanted to be near you,” Lottie says and the other girls nod.

“I’m sure he was just too tired to drive.” None of them look like they’re buying it, which is fair. I wouldn’t buy it if I was them.

“Honey,” Lottie says in her sweet southern way, placing a hand on my arm. “This doesn’t look fake to me.” Panic builds in me like steam in a boiling kettle.

“We’re best friends, all of this is just the fake dating messing it up. I don’t feel that way about Bennett,” I lie. “And he doesn’t feel that way about me. If he did, he’d tell me. I know he would.”

Lottie averts her gaze and steps away from me. “You know him better than me,” she says and I nod. Yes, I know Bennett. That should be a comfort to me. I know him well enough to be certain all of this isn’t real. It’ll go away once we’re done with the plan.

Except ... I don’t really know what Bennett looks like when he’s pursuing someone, do I? He’s never done it before. Tendrils of confusion push through what I thought I knew, like tree roots encroaching on the foundation of a building. I’m worried that what I’ve built my case on, why I’ve said all along that Bennett and I won’t work, is beginning to crumble beneath me.

CHAPTER 15

CHAPTER 15

Bennett St. James

Something jabs at my cheek, bringing me out of sleep. I groan and my face. The jab comes again and again until my eyes open.

“Bennington, you better wake up right this instant and tell me what’s on!” Lottie stands over me, her sparkly pink fingernail pointed direction, no doubt the source of the poking I woke up to.

It takes me a moment to realize why Lottie would be standing in front of me. When I survey my surroundings, embarrassment flushes my face. Grace are nearby, watching with their own curious expressions.

“It’s not what it looks like!” I shift on the couch, pain shooting through my neck. That’s not going to be fun for a few days.

“Really?” MJ asks in an even tone. “It looks like Sophie fell asleep last night and you’re so in love with her that you didn’t want to wake her up.” I cringe, rubbing the back of my neck to release the tension.

“Okay, so it’s exactly what it looks like,” I say while looking around at Sophie. It would be awful if she heard any of this.

“Sophie went to get ready for work,” Grace says, answering my thought. “You’re finally admitting you’re in love with her?” Lottie asks.

expression hopeful and excited.

“I-” Pausing, I frown. I’ve been falling in love, sure, but am I in love with Sophie, truly? I wanted to deny Lottie, but I don’t know that I can admit I’ve never been in love, but I imagine it must feel like this. I can’t stop thinking about her, my heart races whenever she’s near, and I’d do anything for her. “Yes,” I whisper. “Yes, I’m in love with her.”

The girls, even MJ, are all wearing smiles now. I can’t help but smile, but it fades when I realize what comes with love. *Confessions of a Fake Boy* My stomach turns sour at the thought. Sophie has shown she’s attracted to me, but it could be a result of the mixed emotions that come with fake dating. When I first jumped on this idea, I thought the mix between fake dating and real feelings would work in my favor. Now, I’m not so sure.

“You have to tell her! She—” Grace hits Lottie’s arm and shakes her head. “Ugh,” Lottie grumbles. “Fine, no meddling, but he does need to tell her.” She gives Grace a pointed look.

“I’m going to tell her,” I assure them. “I don’t want to wait any longer. I’ve just been afraid that she’ll be overwhelmed and run away.”

“She might,” MJ speaks up and the other two women shoot her a look. “What?” She shrugs. “He should know what he’s getting into. Sophie went through a breakup, and now he’s going to admit his feelings to her two months after. It’s no small thing.” She’s right, even though I wasn’t.

“You’re going to scare him off from telling her,” Lottie says and MJ looks unconcerned.

“I’m scared, yeah, but I’m still going to tell her. I don’t want to keep this secret anymore. It will only get more difficult as time goes on.”

“You’re a good guy, Ben,” Grace says with a soft smile. “We’re all

for you but be careful with our girl. She's sensitive lately."

ve with "I know, I'm going to do my best. I'd never want to hurt her."

ymore. The sound of a door opening interrupts our conversation. Sophie
i't stop into the room and eyes our group.

nything "What did I walk into?" she asks with a laugh. Her hair is in two b
style she often does for work, and she's wearing the t-shirt I got her,
uile too, me smile.

id love. "We were just talking about how you fell asleep on me last night." I
icted to tints her skin, which only makes me grin more. "Couldn't even r
dating, through the documentary."

nd real "I was exhausted from work all week and you were—" she cuts her
biting her lip.

er head. "He was what?" Lottie asks, ever the instigator. Sophie shakes her h
ll her." "Nothing, he was nothing." Her blush deepens and she avoids m

She must not have told them everything from last night. Warmth
longer, through me at the thought that she hid it from them because that me
thinks of it as more than just friendly.

a look. Lottie looks like she wants to say something, but she holds it in.

hie just "You're heading to work?" I change the subject, hoping to rein in al
ot even emotions in this room.

ish she "Yeah, I figured I needed to make up for some of the time I've miss
the events."

I seems "Okay, um." I suddenly feel awkward in front of our audience c
friends. "Have a good day," I say lamely, but she grants me a smile an

p this a "You too, Ben," she says before heading to the door to grab her b
keys.

rooting I'm able to leave the townhouse without any more questions throw

and as I drive I'm barely able to focus on the road.

I slept awful last night, but I'm wired now, and there's not a drop of caffeine in my system. There's no way I can sleep now that I know I'm in love with my best friend.

I'm in love with Sophie. The very thought makes me feel as though I'm making standing on the edge of the high dive board in high school. There's an unsettled feeling in the deepest part of my abdomen. The kind of feeling that makes you want to run away, but also jump and get it over with. It's a feeling I've never felt when it comes to a person before, and you'd think you'd be unsure of whether to run or jump, but no.

I'm jumping. Head first, no holding back.

lead.



my eyes.

"Bennett?" My mom lifts her eyes from the book in her hands when she enters the home library. Her feet are draped over my father's lap, who is reading as well. Their position reminds me of Sophie's feet on my bed last night.

"Sorry I didn't call, but I figured you'd be home. Nana said you were here," I say and my mom waves a hand at me.

"Don't apologize, we're happy to see you. Is everything alright? You look like you haven't slept."

"I wouldn't sleep either if I'd made such a spectacle of myself at the party," my sister says, her head popping out from behind a bookshelf, making me jump. Mom gives her a chastising look, while my dad just smirks.

"What are you doing here? Where's Daniel?"

stare at me,

“We’re here for Sunday dinner because I’m the favorite who didn’t drop of away,” Naomi teases. “Daniel is watching a hockey game in the media room. I’m in. He doesn’t let me watch it with him because I talk about how cute the girls are.”

“I shake my head. “I’m not surprised by anything you just said.”

“No one is anymore,” my father mumbles and Naomi shoots him a glare. “Let’s focus on the fact that your son toppled over an entire chocolate fountain last night and then ran away.”

“Let’s not,” I say and flop down into a large armchair across from my parents. Naomi ambles over, her large belly showing her impending due date, and sits in a chair next to me.

“Mrs. Beverly came up to us at church this morning and detailed the whole fiasco. I laughed so hard I peed a little.”

I scrunch up my face in mild disgust. “I did not need to know that.”

“You’re going to scar the poor boy,” Mom laughs.

“What else are sisters for?”

I’m about to retort when my dad clears his throat. “I doubt Benne would have all this way to talk about a chocolate fountain,” he says, watching me. “I doubt Benne would have all this way to talk about a chocolate fountain,” he says, watching me. “I doubt Benne would have all this way to talk about a chocolate fountain,” he says, watching me.”

“Then what did you come for?” Naomi asks, and everyone looks at her expectantly.

“Can’t a man come to visit his family just because?”

“He can,” my mother assents. “But you didn’t.”

“How do you know that?”

“Oh for goodness’ sake Ben, just tell us!” Naomi huffs from beside me. My leg starts to bounce and everyone in the room now knows I’m nervous. “I came here because my family always has the best advice, but I can’t tell you what it is.”

't movetruthful with them either because of Sophie's whole situation. If anyone
a room.out, she'd be so upset.

players "I'm in love with Sophie," I blurt out and it's quiet for a moment.

"Well, duh." Naomi leans back, one hand on her stomach. "I thought
were coming here to tell us something we don't know."

glare. "Don't tease him, Naomi. He just didn't know himself yet," my
ocolatechides before swinging her legs around so she's facing me fully. "I'm
for you darling, but why are you here alone to tell us? Did Sophie
om my poorly?"

ue date, "I haven't told her," I cringe.

"Ah, so that's why you're here. You're worried she won't respon
e wholesince your relationship is fake." My mouth drops open as my moth
down every illusion Sophie and I built.

"Wh-what are you talking about?" It's not hard to look caught of
because I am.

"I knew something was off from the moment you told me, but I c
tt camefigure it out. I had my suspicions that you two were faking things, bu
ne overno motive to ground that theory." I resist the urge to roll my eyes
detective terms. "But I ran into Whitney at the first ball. After she'd
s at mefew too many glasses of chardonnay, she informed me that the only v
could get Sophie to come was to bribe her. I figured Sophie wouldn't
date right after her breakup, so you stepped up."

"Glad you cracked the case." My tone is dry, making her narrow her

"You should have known better than to keep something from me."

ide me. "So I guess the whole family knows now?"

rvous. I "Just us in this room," Naomi chimes in. "Oh, and Daniel, becaus
oe fullymarried so no secrets."

ing got “Okay, that’s good at least. Please, don’t tell anyone else. Sophie will be
upset.”

“You two shouldn’t be lying to everyone,” my dad says in his best
voice. My head hangs at his disappointed tone.

“I know. It sounded like a good idea at the time, but we both hate
it since it started. Sophie needs this for her business, though, so please do
nothing. We’re so close to the end.”

respond “We won’t say anything,” Mom says, and I breathe a sigh of relief.

promise you’re going to tell Sophie your true feelings. Lying to Wh
one thing, lying to Sophie is not an option.”

and well “I’m going to tell her the next time I see her alone, I promise. I don’t
want to wait any longer either.” Sebastian’s words about Sophie

manipulated are ringing in my head. I hope that by waiting to
of guard attraction I didn’t shoot myself in the foot. My leg bounces faster.

“Bennett, it was easy for all of us to see that both of you have feelings
couldn’t teach other. Nothing fake about it on either side. You just have to be open
at I had honest with her. It’s going to be okay.”

is at her “What if it’s not? What if I already messed everything up with the
I had a boyfriend thing?”

way she “Then you take it in stride and show her that it’s been real all along
want to really think it’s going to be okay.”

My mom’s words reassure me and help lessen my anxiety. Mom’s
eyes. Sophie for as long as I have. In different ways, because there is more
mother-daughter relationship, but she knows her just as well as I do. I
this would be the feeling I’d have before heading back to Atlanta.
e we’re Sophie isn’t going to be an easy task but knowing that my family is

It'll be so for us helps. Even more than that, knowing that they saw affection
side to help ease my mind.

Baritone Sophie wants more with me. She might be scared, but I think she's
that desire. I just have to show her she doesn't need to be afraid
of lying. Michael might have broken her heart, but I won't.

Don't say

*"If you
itney is*

I don't want
feeling
see her

things for
open and

this fake

g. But I

known
more of a
I hoped
Telling
rooting

for us helps. Even more than that, knowing that they saw affection on her side to help ease my mind.

Sophie wants more with me. She might be scared, but I think she still has that desire. I just have to show her she doesn't need to be afraid of me. Michael might have broken her heart, but I won't.

CHAPTER 16

CHAPTER 16

Bennett St. James

It's Thursday and I still haven't been able to talk to Sophie about my friend. I went by her food truck when she was supposed to be closing down today yesterday, but she hit a hot streak and was still slammed. There was no way I'd have time to talk to her. She looked exhausted too. Having grown up with a mom and sister, I know better than to have a big conversation with a woman who is tired.

So now I'm on my way home from work, unsure of how to tell her about our next scheduled event. We have a sit-down charity dinner tomorrow then another ball on Sunday evening.

There's no way I can last through another event...seeing her all dressed up, being close enough to smell her sweet perfume, staring into her captivating eyes... I shake my head, gripping my steering wheel in an attempt to stay focused on the road in front of me. Yeah, I won't make it through without revealing something.

When I pull into my building's parking lot, I glance around just to see if Sophie maybe came to surprise me. That's when I spot the edge of a black pickup parked in the designated street parking down the road. *She's g*

prank me. I decide to leave my bag of paperwork in the car and come for it later tonight. There's no telling what she has up her sleeve.

The trek to my apartment feels incredibly long and yet so short at the same time. I'm not ready for what's behind my door. Not because of the prank because of what I have to say afterward. I hope Sophie pranks me for the sake of our lives, and that's why this conversation needs to go well. I barely know what I'm going to say to her, much less how I can segway from her prank to confessing my feelings.

Could I lose my best friend tonight? The thought weighs on my mind, feeling heavy and uncomfortable. There's too much at stake here. I'm not sure I can even envision a future without Sophie at this point. At least as my friend for the time being. She's sweet and understanding and wonderful, but she could also take things in a way that was not the right way and our friendship could turn into a bittersweet memory as a result.

While a With that pleasant train of thought swirling around my head, I rake my fingers through my hair and shove my key into the lock of my front door. Upon my first step into my apartment, a shocking cold falls over me. Freezing rain falls from the night sky, and chunks of ice hit the top of my head and soak my whole upper body.

"Ahh!" A gargled sound of shock leaves my mouth. Icy water slides down my spine, making a chill wrack my body. A squeak of laughter motivates my drenched head to find Sophie standing a few feet away. Her phone is still hanging from her hand, leading me to believe she filmed the whole thing without my knowledge. "Welcome home," she says with a toothy grin. I shut the door behind me and then narrow my eyes at her.

To see if "Oh, you're in for it, Sophie Cunningham," I say, making her turn around on her red heel and book it toward the kitchen. I run after her, my shoes squeaking on the floor as I go.

ie backslipping under me. I slide into the kitchen where Sophie is standing
the island. We circle it in tandem, eyes locked.

ie same “Come on, Soph, just let me give you a hug and then we’re even.”
ink, but out my arms while she holds back a smile.

the rest “Somehow, I don’t believe that will be the end of your payback.”

y know I shrug. “The longer you run the worse it will get.” Her eyes flick
ranking the room as we keep circling, no doubt thinking of an escape plan. Su
she lurches to the left, and I do the same, but she runs to the right. It’s
7 mind, though, I’m faster than her. I snag her before she can run any further a
ure if I her to my chest. Her head hits right under my chin, so her face gets i
friend into my cold and damp jacket.

e all of She squeals. “Ben, stop! It’s freezing.” I hug her tighter while she
nemory against me. When I finally let go, her sage green t-shirt has turned
forest green, and her face glistens from being wet. She glares at me,
a hand all for show.

pon my “You know I always get payback,” I say and she rolls her eyes.

g water “Well, are you done now? I made dinner for you, it’s in the oven
ody. warm. But I’m not letting you have any if you try to hug me again.”

s down “Trying to up your score in our fake relationship?” The line cor
me lift before I can think about it, and my smile falls soon after I say it.
hone is an unwelcome reminder that I have to talk to Sophie, soon.

isco. “Maybe.” She walks to the oven and opens it to check on what
ind me inside. “Go get changed before you get a cold. Can’t have my fake bo
too sick to go to the event. I think I’d rather lose the catering gig than
on her go with someone my *mother* chose for me.”

ing and “Do you need a shirt too?” I ask and she glances down at her dai
with a laugh.

behind “Yeah, that would be good. Thanks, Ben.” She throws a smile over her shoulder that sends an arrow right into my heart. I can’t lose this. I can’t let her go. I hold her.

After changing into sweatpants and a t-shirt, I come out with a plate of food for Sophie. She’s dishing out our dinner onto a plate. Whatever it is, the entire house smells amazing, which I’m able to notice better now. Suddenly, I’m not freezing and wet.

“What did you make?” I stand near her as she plates the meal.

“Osso Buco over polenta,” she says as if making braised veal is the best deal. As if she didn’t work all day and then come to my house to make a meal that takes a few hours to cook.

“Soph, you didn’t need to do all this. You know I’m happy with a grilled cheese. Or even take out.” She shrugs then drizzles more of the sauce from the bottom of the pan onto the meat.

“You’ve done so much for me recently. You comforted me after my breakup with Michael, then you volunteered yourself to be my fake boyfriend to stay and helped defend me against the force that is my mother. I think I deserve more than a grilled cheese.” She looks up at me and my chest tightens. Her face is open and sincere, making me want to do even more for her than I have already. If she told me she wanted authentic French braised veal, our meal I’d hop on a flight to Paris and buy a whole bakery if it meant I could give her a smile.

“I’ve been meaning to talk to you about the fake relationship,” I say and her face falls.

“You don’t want to do it anymore? I know it’s hard, but it’s just two big events and maybe a couple of small ones but I—”

I cut her off. “Soph, breathe. That’s not what it is. Why don’t you

ver her and we can eat and talk in the living room?”

n’t lose She lets out a breath and nods.

“Okay, I’ll do that.” She takes the shirt from my hand and goes i
n black bedroom to change. I try not to think about the fact that she’s changing
it is her room. I might have failed by the time she comes back out. No one w
ow that know.

We settle onto my couch and Sophie looks so at home in my t-shirt
my blanket, that it almost hurts to look at her.

no big “Did you taste the food while I was changing?” she asks and I giv
: a meal pointed look.

“No, I didn’t, because I’m your best friend who knows you like to c
1 just watch people take their first bite.”

e sauce She scrunches her nose up at my wording, then gestures to the plat
lap. “Well, try it! Then we can talk.”

fter the I dig my fork into the veal, and it’s so tender that it falls apart. I sc
y friend the polenta, sauce, and chopped vegetables as well to get the perfect l
nk that soon as it hits my tongue, I have to stop myself from groaning. It’s r
y chest salty but balanced out with a hint of acid. As with everything Sophi
more for it’s impeccable.

read for “Amazing,” I say as I shovel another bite in, and she giggles.

it she’d “Good, thank you for waiting to try it.” Silence falls over the livin
for a moment, and I take another bite before gathering the courage to
p stuff, up.

“I have to tell you something, but I don’t want you to freak out.”

no more “That’s not foreboding at all.”

My heart picks up speed. I set my plate on the coffee table and cl
change throat. I open my mouth to confess my feelings, but the words won’t

run a hand through my hair, sighing. *Just tell her. You can't avoid longer.*

nto my “Ben, whatever it is, it will all be okay. We’re best friends.”

g in my “That’s the thing: I don’t want to be best friends anymore.” Her e
ill everbig, a bewildered look on her face. It’s only then that I realize what

“Oh! No, no, I mean I *do* want to be friends.” *This is not going wel*
t, underMy mouth feels like someone poured a truckload of sand in it, so I g
water to take a sip. Except when I do, my hand catches the edge of m
e her ahangng off the table, sending the meal to the floor. I don’t think thi
get any worse.

creepily “Let me get something to clean it up,” Sophie says as she stands
spring up out of my seat.

e in my “No, don’t worry about it!” I laugh nervously.

“Ben, what on earth is going on? Are you okay?”

oop up I cross the room over to her and grab her hands. “I’m not okay
oite. Asmess.” She nods like she agrees completely. I squeeze her hands a
ich andsqueezes mine back with a wary smile. I draw strength from her ges
e does,want to be more than friends. I’m in love with you, Soph. Th
relationship hasn’t been fake for me in the slightest. I want more w
and I have for a while.”

g room She pulls her hands away and takes a step back. Confusion and
o speakintermingle in her eyes. She shakes her head like she doesn’t believe
think you’re just mixed up, Ben. It’s hard to pretend when we’re so c
each other. I felt some things too, but it’s all fake. You’re confused is a

I shake my head and take a step toward her, but she takes anothe
lear mymaking me frown. Hearing that she felt something gives me hope,
come. Imoving away from me counteracts the feeling.

l it any “I felt this way before we started fake dating. It just helped me c
how I felt.”

“I think this has all gone to your head and that’s okay. I can g
yes getsomeone else. In a week you’ll see this was all silly.”

: I said. “I’ve had feelings for you since before you and Michael broke up,”
l at all. and she just blinks at me.

grab my “You must be mistaken.” Silence stretches between us. I feel li
y plate looking at her from across an ocean instead of my living room. “T
s could when. The exact moment.” She must want me to say I don’t know so
use it against me and say I’m confused still, but I remember that fate
, and I all too well.

“The first day I met Michael. You two were walking up to me ou
meet up for dinner. You looked like a shell of yourself under his arm.
tell he was a lampshade over your light. But then you lifted your he
, I’m a saw me. You smiled and it was beautiful, like pure sunshine. Sor
and she changed that day, and it’s only gotten worse since then.”

ture. “I She shakes her head, stepping back again. She trips over herself b
is fake away when I try to help her. My heart feels like someone is taking a
ith you knife to it.

“That can’t be true. How did I not know?”

l shock “I kept myself busy for a long time because you were with hin
me. “I couldn’t do anything about it. But now you’re not with him, thankfully
close to She snaps her eyes to me, anger flashing in them. “What’s that supp
all.” mean?”

r back, “Sophie, everyone hated how he treated you. He wasn’t good eno
but he you.”

“Oh, I know what this is. You were jealous because I started sp

confirm more time with him than you. This isn't you having feelings, this is the
of male ego."

go with I take a step back, feeling like I've been hit physically. "How could
say that?" I think I see regret come over her, but it's gone just as quickly
' I blurted out.

"If you had these feelings for me, and they were real, why did you
like I'm fake dating?"

Tell me "Because I was scared of you running away or getting upset like
she can right now. I hoped that maybe you would see how good we are together
of a full day "So your plan was to manipulate me into loving you?"

I scrub my hands over my face, feeling like my world is crumbling
inside of me and I can't do anything except try to catch the pieces as they fall
I could tell you now to avoid that. I felt awful and knew I couldn't pretend
and no longer. I know you're scared, but please, don't think the worst of me."

nothing "I'm not scared, Bennett, I'm angry. If this is all true, you should have
told me right away. Michael broke up with me *months* ago. You've had a lot of
opportunities to say something, but you never did."

carving "Why are you still questioning if it's true? You know me, Sophie,
would I hurt you?"

"Either way, true or not, you've hurt me. Best friends don't lie to
each other-not like you have." Her words sound cold and distant. She's
walking away. Panic claws at my chest.

used to "I was scared, Sophie. I didn't want to lose you. You have to understand
I'd do anything to make you happy. I'll still go to these events with you
though for it can be as fake or as real as you want it to be. I'm not trying to force
anything into anything."

responding "I can't be here right now," she chokes out and rushes toward the door

the result “We need to talk this out. Please don’t leave.” *Me, don’t leave* i
brain finishes.

ould you “I need some time alone.” She slings her bag over her shoulder an
ck as other shoes, not even bothering to put them on before rushing out the do

The door slams shut, echoing through the empty apartment.

suggest *What have I done?*

you are

er.”

around

ll. “I’m

nd any

ave told

undred

e. Why

to each

pulling

erstand

ou, and

rce you

or.

“We need to talk this out. Please don’t leave.” *Me, don’t leave me*, my brain finishes.

“I need some time alone.” She slings her bag over her shoulder and grabs her shoes, not even bothering to put them on before rushing out the door.

The door slams shut, echoing through the empty apartment.

What have I done?

CHAPTER 17

CHAPTER 17

Sophie Cunningham

No, no, no. This isn't happening.

I can barely see the road through the blur of my tears. My bare feet and keep slipping against the pedals. I make it a few miles away Bennett's apartment before I have to pull over in a parking lot.

I bang the steering wheel with the palm of my hand until it hurts to to continue. When I went to Bennett's apartment tonight this is the last thought would happen. I thought we'd laugh and eat dinner together maybe being around him would feel less strange if I did something like that.

Now, it's like I'm on a tilt-a-whirl at the fair, my emotions spinn faster and faster until I want to throw up. My mind can't wrap aroun he confessed. It just doesn't make sense. I aggressively swipe the tea my face with the hem of my shirt. It's only then that I realize it's *h* My chest aches, but I force myself to drive again.

I don't understand why he'd lie to me. It's hard to fathom that he's with me, but beyond that, he *hid it* from me. We've never had secrets, not intentional ones. I don't know how to process any of this. Tears

down my face the whole drive and by the time I pull into the tow driveway, the sleeve of Bennett's shirt is drenched from me wiping away tears.

There's a small, green SUV parked in front of me, which means home. If I had anywhere else to go, I'd leave right now. I love my friends, but I just want to lock myself away until the pain subsides. Right now I'm convinced it won't ever fade. The hollow feeling in my chest has been growing since I slammed the door to Bennett's apartment. No matter how long I keep up I'll be a shell before the night is over.

I wipe my face again with the ridiculously soft black fabric. It amazes me how comfortable it is. I want to yank it off and rip it to shreds, but I'm sure it's more likely than not I'll wash it and keep it forever.

I get out and slam my truck door. I want to be angry, not sad, but my truck isn't cooperating. My brain wants to take a sledgehammer to everything I shared with Bennett, but my heart wants to take each memory out and go through it. I like the heartbroken girl I am. I try to unlock the front door, but my hand is shaking too much and I drop the keys. Picking them up, I try again, only for them to drop once more. I'm about to get my keys and throw them in the bushes when the door swings open.

MJ is standing there, watching me with concern in her hazel eyes. She bends down and grabs my keys for me, then stands to the side so that I can walk over the threshold. She shuts the door behind us and looks at me without saying a word.

"I don't want to talk about it."

"No one is asking you to."

I nod once and start walking toward the kitchen. I get halfway before I hear a stream of water in my tracks.

house “Bennett told me he has feelings for me.” MJ makes a non-
way my acknowledgment but says nothing else. “I don’t know if I believe him

I’m upset with him. Or if I have feelings for him too.” Actually, I do
; MJ is It’s all of those things. Which only makes it hurt more.

ny best “Sounds confusing,” MJ finally says after a long moment of silence.
Except, I start toward the kitchen again. Whenever I’m stressed or anx-
y chestupset, I like to organize things. The pantry seems like a good place
it. If ittonight, so I begin unloading all the items and placing them
countertops.

oys me MJ enters the kitchen and leans against the cabinet across from me
it moretaking out canned goods and stacking them on the counter. Why do you
so many cans, anyway? We rarely use any of them. Maybe one of the
y heartbecame a doomsday prepper and didn’t tell me.

memory “I know what you’re thinking,” I grumble and MJ raises a dark brow
ough it “I didn’t know you became a mind reader. Do tell,” she says and I
nds areher snarky tone.

only for “I can’t handle your attitude right now, MJ,” I say and she shakes her
into the “You’re thinking that I shouldn’t have done this whole fake dating thing
that I should have listened to you and Grace and Lottie.”

es. She “Sounds like you’re projecting.”

at I can I give her a dark look, but she seems unphased.

at me “I’m not projecting, I just know you and I know what everyone is going to
think when they see me this way.”

“They’re going to think exactly what I thought when I saw you:
she’s okay.” I stop my stacking and look at her across the kitchen. “
e I stopno one is waiting to pull out the ‘I told you so’ banner. I’m here for

wise of you want to talk about what happened, so quit making me sound like a fool. Or if you're my friend and just tell me."

I know. I sigh. "I'm sorry, you're right. You're not a bad friend, I'm just a mess."

She doesn't say anything to this, which is probably confirmation that I'm a mess. I pull out the organization bins I ordered after Michael broke up with me and start rearranging the snacks and ingredients in them.

"Bennett told me he's had feelings for me since he saw me with Michael on our person for the first time." The admission hangs in the air like a raincloud ready to pour. "I don't know if I believe that, though. It's not possible."

"Has he given you any reason to think he's lying?" MJ asks. Angela shrugs at the question, but I tamp it down. When Bennett asked how I could trust him if he was lying, it infuriated me. He's been lying to me since that day, according to him. How can I trust anything he says?

"If he's not lying about the time period, then it's almost worse in my opinion. Then he's lied about having feelings for me all this time."

"How do you feel if you assume he's not lying? Let's say he's telling the truth about starting to fall for you after your first date with Michael."

Her saying that Bennett is falling for me out loud makes my stomach flip. I've never allowed myself to think that Bennett could love me in the way I love him, not even when I crushed on him in high school. I went in assuming my feelings were going to be unrequited.

I can't respond. Emotion clogs my throat. It should be a dream come true. *I hope* for Bennett to want more with me. What girl doesn't want to date her best friend? But I can't get all of the voices out of my head telling me this is not a good idea.

He lied to you.

e a bad *He's never been in a relationship before.*

Your heart is still healing from Michael.

mess.” *Can you trust your own judgment again?*

I am a *What if you break up?*

up with *You'll never be enough for him or anyone else.*

The scary part is most of the voices sound like my mother, and Michael in them sound like Michael. I shake my head as tears burn my eyes once

heavy “Hey,” MJ says softly, coming around to pull me into a hug. “You doesn’t have to respond. I was just trying to help, but if that’s not helpful, w

something else. I can make brownies.” MJ has a bunch of dietary restriction flares that make her brownies devoid of refined sugar, gluten, and dairy. I think somehow they’re still delicious. She knows they’re my favorite.

ording to “Normally I’d say no to be polite ...”

MJ laughs and pulls back from the hug. “I’ll start making them. When a way you go get cleaned up and lay on the couch? No romance movies all

She gives me a stern look.

ling the “Thank you,” I sniffle. “You’re secretly mushy on the inside and you for it.”

ch dip. MJ sets her mouth in a hard line, but I can see the warmth in her eyes at way, before I change my mind.”

y crush I scurry out of the kitchen because there is no way I’m jeopardizing my chance at homemade brownies.

me true I scrub my face with a washcloth, probably ruining my skin in the process. But there’s just something about a good scrub after you’re crying and your mascara is all goopy. It makes you not care about your moisture barrier whatever it is those skincare gurus talk about on the internet.

After washing my face, I change out of my jeans into leggings .

keep the t-shirt on. It's soft, and I need soft right now. That's the only
Not because it's Ben's.

When I walk into the living room, Grace is there and so is
Sympathy lines their faces and I instantly want to run away. It's not
character to judge me, but it's still scary to be vulnerable. Lottie wraps
ome of in a cupcake-scented hug and Grace throws her arms around me too.
again. "I love Ben, but I will beat him up," Lottie says, and I laugh at the
u don't of her sweet voice trying to be threatening.
we'll do "You don't need to do that." Because I love Ben, too. Even after
rictions it's too ingrained in me to stop. I think that's what makes it hurt so n
ry, but always hurts more when you love the person who wronged you.

"MJ can send her brothers over to get him too," Grace offers as
back from the group hug and I laugh. I know neither of them is serio
y don't are just trying to make me smile.

lowed." "I don't think that's necessary," MJ says as she comes into the living

"Bennett told her he loved her, so I feel like that doesn't warrant a ho
l I love from the Carter brothers. Now, if he would have done anything to h
..." She trails off, sitting down on the couch. "It would only take one c

es. "Go "All MJ said in her text was that you came home from Bennett's

What happened?" Lottie asks, tugging me down to sit on the couch
ing my her.

"He told me he's had feelings since he met Michael, and that none
rocess. fake dating stuff has been fake to him. It's hard for me to believe that
id your true, especially because I thought he would tell me before now."

rier or Lottie looks to Grace. They seem like they're having a conve
except no words are being shared. Grace nods, and then Lottie glances
.. but I who immediately shrugs. *What on earth?*

reason. “Sophie, Bennett is telling the truth,” Lottie says and reaches out my hand. After giving it a squeeze, she continues. “We’ve known for Lottie now that he’s had feelings for you. He made them pretty obvious in their bachelorette party. He even admitted it to Callum during their poke s me up before.”

My mouth drops open. “All of you knew?”
e sound “We didn’t want to say anything because it wasn’t our place,” elaborates. “But now that he’s told you, you should know he didn’t all this, hurt you.”

uch. It Lottie nods. “It was genuinely the last thing he wanted to do. W your side, so if you’re mad at him so are we, but I don’t think he meant we pull to you.”

ous and I try to let this information soak in. Bennett didn’t want to hurt me, did. He should have just been honest. At the same time, I didn’t make g room on him. I was dating someone else, then I told him I was giving up m use call year. Assuming he’s been wanting me all this time ... it would hav hurt her hard to *not* jump into the fake dating plan I came up with. It still was r all.” of him, but I see how it happened.

s upset. “I don’t think he did either.” I sigh. “But what am I supposed to d next to My best friend has feelings for me, and I don’t know if I’m ready relationship, much less one that could make me lose him for good.”

of this I had a taste of that pain tonight, and it’s awful. I don’t think I could : it’s all a true breakup with Bennett.

“Just tell him that,” Grace says. “Tell him that you’re unsure. Ben r sation, good guy, he’ll understand.”

s at MJ, I stare down at my hands. “I don’t know. I said a lot of awful th him.” A realization stabs me in the chest, making me suck in a breath.

to grabso mean to him.” Tears spring to my eyes. “What if I ruined ever
a whileWhat if none of this matters because he never wants to see me again?”
at my I’m crying again, and I have a feeling the tears aren’t going to let u
r gamewhile.

“You’ve been friends for over twenty years. You’re not going to lo
over one fight, even one as big as this.” MJ’s straightforward word
Gracebalm to my heart tonight. She wouldn’t say that if she didn’t believe it.
want to “My suggestion is to just take a day to rest and think, then reach
him. That way you’ve both cooled down and maybe you’ll have tho
e’re onwhat to say to him,” Lottie says. “Chances are he’ll reach out to you
nt to lietomorrow is over anyway.”

“That sounds like a good idea.”

, but he The oven beeps, and MJ stands.

it easy “For tonight, let’s just eat our weight in brownies and watch you
en for acrime shows,” Grace laughs and I smile, but on the inside I’m all twi
e beenthinking about Bennett’s hands on my skin as we ignored that docum
it’s rightHe was so kind to me like he always is. I can’t recall a time when I
hasn’t tried to take care of me, to love me. Looking back on the eve
o now?can see that during his confession he was still trying to care for me.

for any Worry wraps its way around my lungs and squeezes. I hope that
ruin everything good by being scared. Because now that I’m faced v
l handlethought of losing him, my feelings are becoming clearer.

It feels like someone has sprayed Windex on my brain and I c
ett is aeverything from the past month clearer. All the little moments I s
guessed now become sweeter when I think of Bennett’s true intention
ings to touch and look is layered with meaning. It makes me wish I could g
“I wasand react differently.

anything? *How did I not see it before? Oh, I wish I would have known.*

My heart aches for the chance to have known how he felt sooner. I wish for maybe we'd be together right now. Cuddled up on his couch, eating

Buco and laughing about my prank. But now there's so much between us I can't use him to figure out.

After living with my mom's toxic form of affection for so long, and now doubling down on that with Michael, I feel as if maybe I did know something about feelings all along, but refused to see it. I've spent my life second-guessing the right amount of love others gave me because one of the people who was supposed to love me before the most, manipulated me instead.

I snuggle deeper into the couch as MJ passes out brownies to all the kids. I just have to make it through tomorrow, then Bennett and I can talk. A part of me wants to run over there now, but a much bigger part of me is too scared. I can't even think about it. I just hope when that break is done I still have my best friend. Bennett is right. I need a break.

I just hope when that break is done I still have my best friend.

Bennett

Evening, I

I didn't

with the

can see

second-

s. Each

go back

How did I not see it before? Oh, I wish I would have known.

My heart aches for the chance to have known how he felt sooner. If I did, maybe we'd be together right now. Cuddled up on his couch, eating Osso Buco and laughing about my prank. But now there's so much between us to figure out.

After living with my mom's toxic form of affection for so long, and then doubling down on that with Michael, I feel as if maybe I did know of Ben's feelings all along, but refused to see it. I've spent my life second-guessing the love others gave me because one of the people who was supposed to love me the most, manipulated me instead.

I snuggle deeper into the couch as MJ passes out brownies to all of us. I just have to make it through tomorrow, then Bennett and I can talk. A part of me wants to run over there now, but a much bigger part of me is too scared. I couldn't bear to face him if he was angry with me. No, Lottie is right, we need a break.

I just hope when that break is done I still have my best friend.

CHAPTER 18

CHAPTER 18

Sophie Cunningham

I didn't think this through. That seems to be the motto of my life lately. I've been too afraid to reach out to Bennett all day, and because of our argument I forgot about the event tonight. It's a charity dinner, and I have no chance. After all we went through, I'm going to miss out on this opportunity. I'm at the finish line. It's not like I can call him now, it'll look like I'm using

I stare at myself in the mirror, trying to will myself to calm down. My hands shake as they brush over the black satin fabric of my cocktail dress. The dress hugs at my waist and shimmers over what little curves I possess, accentuating them. The dress stops mid calf, and I'm using a pair of black heels to counteract my height and balance out the lengthier dress.

I'm still going to the dinner. Hopefully, my mother will accept Bennett's last minute cancellation and still keep our deal. Bennett's words about needing her help come to mind, but I can't think of them right now. I just keep going and do what I can. Even if I have to do it alone. The thought makes tears come again, so I tilt my head back and fan my face to keep them in.

I kept my makeup relatively simple tonight, but my wing liner

survive a sob fest. And I know that if I start crying I'll face plant in a pillow and not even go. No, no tears allowed tonight.

I smooth the top of my hair which I've left down in soft curls. The lavender dye in my hair is fading some, starting to look more silvery but I don't mind tonight. That could work in my favor with my mom tonight.

I wave to the girls on my way out, avoiding eye contact so that they don't say something and accidentally trigger the tears I've been desperately trying to hold in all day.

The drive to the dinner venue isn't long, which I'm thankful for because every song that comes on reminds me of Ben. Love song, breakup song, anything. I've got a song, you name it. I somehow relate it to him. If I was on a game show tonight, I'd win big time.

I hand my keys to the valet, who eyes my truck like it's going to crash right at his feet the moment he gets in it. I'm sure most of the people here are driving in a Tesla or a Mercedes. Once he drives away, I'm left alone again. I'm hating how it feels. I'm convinced loneliness is the worst thing a person can feel.

I walk around the big fountain at the entrance, admiring the architecture. I almost stop dead in my tracks. There, waiting on a bench in the courtyard.

Ben, *my* Ben. He lifts his head and sees me. I'm frozen in place, unsure of what to do or say. Immediately, he stands and takes a step toward me. He looks at me but when I don't make any moves, he walks slowly toward me.

He looks achingly gorgeous tonight in black dress pants and a white shirt with a few buttons undone. I'm suddenly overcome with the desire to kiss his face right where his skin is exposed. To breathe him in and feel his warmth.

"Sophie." My name sounds like desperation on his lips. Under his

into my dark like he hasn't slept. Mine would look the same if not for the con
piled on.

ls. The "Ben," I choke out, my emotions starting to overtake me. "You came
blonde, "Of course I did I—" He stops for a moment, looking pained. "I love
you." he grits out.

you don't Everything around me falls away and I'm brought back to the first
/ trying Bennett said he loved me when we were kids. My dad had just passed
from a sudden heart attack. Bennett came up to me in the hospital because
and told me it was going to be okay. I told him he was stupid for saying
party and that he had his dad, so he didn't know anything. That maybe if
you would have died he'd know how I felt. He tried to hug me and I hit his chest, crying

I collapsed in his arms. Bennett, at eleven years old, whispered that he
could break me for the first time on a dirty hospital floor.

he drove Standing in this courtyard at twenty-six years old I feel the same
again and back then. Scared, unsure, and unworthy of the words he just uttered.
son can kind of feeling that steals your breath and makes your knees buckle
when that very thing happens Bennett grasps my elbow and leads me to
the cold metal bench he was occupying when I arrived.

the courtyard is "I'm sorry," he murmurs, now holding both my hands. "I should have
assured you sooner." His thumbs rub circles on the backs of my hands, threatening
to falter, distract me from his words. "I promise I didn't mean to hurt you."

"I know," I whisper, trying to hold myself together. "I love you too."
His thumbs pause and I find I miss the soothing movement immediately
to press recall all the times he's comforted me over the past month and beyond
feel his hand it makes my heart inflate like a Valentine's Day balloon. He's so
loving. Maybe that's what makes loving him so scary in the first place.
my eyes is if I let myself I'd tumble over the edge, no parachute in sight.

dealer I “I don’t know how I feel about us yet,” I say, training my eyes
joined hands so that I don’t have to look into his eyes. I’m too afraid
e.” I’m going to find there.

e you,” “That’s okay, you can take your time. I never wanted to rush you.”

“You aren’t upset?” I chance it and look up at him. He’s smiling.

st time “The only thing upsetting me is the thought that I hurt you.”

d away “I wish you would have told me sooner,” I admit. “But I understand
nally you didn’t.”

ing that “Can you forgive me?”

his dad “Yes,” I answer and his grin rivals the sun. He pulls me into a hug
ig, until scent of him calms the anxiety swirling like a tornado inside of me ju
e loved moment. He’s safe and steady.

“Take as much time as you need to figure things out. And don’t be
as I did to tell me if you don’t feel the same way.” I almost laugh at the thou
It’s the hold it back.

le, and There’s no question anymore *if* I feel something for Bennett. Now I
e to the afraid of what the feelings I have will do to me, to us.

“Where do we go from here though?” I look behind us at the
ive told mansion, warm light in the windows breaks the darkness of night
ning to around us.

“We’ll do what we’ve been doing all along. If that’s what you wa
” says, drawing my eyes back to him.

ately. I “I want to see this through ...”

nd that, “But?”

easy to “But now I feel like things will be even more awkward. Yo
I know something I’m not sure I’m ready for, but I’m making you go thro

on our motions of the very thing you want. It sounds like torture.” I shake my head and look at the ground. “I can’t put you through that.”

“Hey,” Bennett whispers and lifts my chin up. Sparks scatter from his small touch, and my heart stutters in my chest. “You’re not making anything, Soph. I came here hoping for a chance, and you’re giving it to me.” His hand shifts so he’s holding the side of my face. “If being by your side tonight is torture, then it’ll be the sweetest torture I’ve ever endured.”

I think I’ve forgotten how to breathe. The very notion of inhale then seems foreign in this moment. Bennett’s thumb caresses my cheek and then before his hand slides away. I sway forward when he removes his hand and I have to grip the metal bench to not fall into him.

How does a woman respond to *that*? I’m afraid. The door to the home opens, light spilling out. The figure in the doorway is tall, slender, and ominous. My mother.

“There you are!” She clicks down the stairs in her too expensive dress. “I’m just—” “What are you doing out here? Dinner is about to begin.” She says that with the same urgency as one might say *the ambulance is on its way*.

“We were just about to head inside,” Bennett says and stands. He holds my hand, settling his hand to me, giving me a boyish grin that reminds me of hiding in the kitchen and eating cake under tables. “That is, if you’re ready?” I place my hand on his. “I’m ready,” he says and stands up next to him.

He intertwines our fingers and it feels like safety, like home.

“Of course she’s ready,” my mother sneers. “She’s *late*.”

“The wonderful part about questions is that I can direct them at a specific person depending on word choice,” Bennett says, “In this case, mine is directed to Sophie, not you.”

My mouth drops open. My mother sputters like she doesn’t know what to say.

my headsay, and she likely doesn't. It's probably been quite a long time since someone antagonized Whitney Cunningham.

From the "See you inside, Mom," I say and tug Bennett past my malfunctioning door and we walk up the stone steps to the imposing door that looks like it belongs on a castle in England, not a mansion in Atlanta.

On our side He opens the door and smiles down at me. I pause for a moment, unsure of what could come from spending a night pretending to date a man who has professed his love for me. Everything feels different already. My safe haven hasn't even crossed the threshold.

Behind me and "We can leave if you want. It's all up to you, Soph." Those words are exactly what I need to hear. I step inside and he follows me, placing his hand on my lower back that sends warm tingles up my spine.

My way is I don't know if I've ever felt this level of control in a relationship. Bennett has his own feelings and desires, but he's sacrificing them to make my own choice. Michael never did that. In fact, he often did the opposite. My desires were less important than his, but I was so caught up in the idea of being wanted that I didn't see things for what they were.

It holds out We enter the dining room, and I have to admit that whoever is hosting has done an amazing job. The table is lengthy, able to seat all of the guests comfortably without being crowded. It's decorated with black taper candles and brass candelabras. The florals are rich burgundy with dark greenery throughout. The host clearly enjoys a gothic style, and I know my dress will be welcome here.

Specific Most of the seats are taken, except two near the head of the table. I expect the host will sit. I'm sure that's why it's been avoided so far. The house is intimidating enough to make me want to ask to switch seats. I don't know what to

since when an older woman with streaks of blue and purple in her curly hair comes and sits in that very spot, I suddenly feel at ease.

Bennett pulls out the high backed chair to the right of the hostess for me. I sit down and follow him with my eyes as he pulls out his own chair for her. The dim lighting casts shadows on his face, making his jawline sharper. I have an urge to run my finger down it.

When he reaches for his water glass I take note of his hand. Some people say he has the hands of a surgeon, strong and skilled. But when I was younger I would have called them piano hands, because his long fingers could easily reach out and play every note effortlessly during our lessons. I wonder what it would be like to feel them sift through my hair as he touches me.

He looks over at me, smirking behind his glass when he catches me watching him. My skin flushes with heat, and my cheeks are liable to burst. He takes a sip of water and I've never wanted a flower so much. He takes a sip of water and I've never wanted a flower so much. He takes a sip of water and I've never wanted a flower so much.

What is wrong with me? It's like the moment he told me it was my feelings that had just abandoned all my anxiety surrounding our relationship and fell in line with desire. I wrench my eyes from him and study the place setting in front of me as if it was the most interesting thing in the world.

I can't get caught up in mere feelings. There's too much at stake here. Bennett reaches over and grabs my hand. The cool condensation from his glass has left his fingertips dark. My traitorous mind forces me to wonder if his lips would have that same color. This if I kissed him right now.

"Are you two newlyweds?" The hostess grins at me when I lift my head and balk at her.

white hair “Just dating,” I squeak and she chortles.

“Even better! I know young love and desire when I see it. Ah, the
for me. I question each look, each touch.” Her tone is wistful yet there’s a sa
and sits about her that makes my nerves swirl. I don’t need any reminders to q
re even everything Bennett does around me. I’ve already been doing it for t
month.

How would “How long have you and your husband been married?” I nod to th
re were black diamond settled on her wrinkled left hand.

fingers “We were married fifty-two years before the Lord took my sweet
sons. I home. Those years were the best of my life, and I know no one e
I kissed compare to him. It’s why I keep this ring on and turn down every o
who asks me on a date. It’s not fair to them.”

hes me “That’s the sweetest thing I’ve ever heard.”

to match “Thank you, dearie. I do miss having someone to share the ups and
ed to be of life with, but I entertain myself with parties like this and throwing
my hair like I’m twenty. It passes the time.”

choice I My heart breaks for her, but at the same time I get the feeling she w
to a pit accept my pity. “Do you have any advice to give? Fifty-two years is
front of time.”

She smiles at me and Bennett. “Make sure you marry someone who
re to let you laugh. That’s the only way life won’t be so boring. Oh! And
I in my they’re a good kisser.” She winks as my eyes get big.

np. My “That’s good advice,” I say, making sure to keep my eyes glued to
coolness not even glance at Bennett. He’s either going to have some flirty look
face, or a silly one that will make me burst into laughter in front of a
ry headhaughty rich people.

The first course comes out, and the woman turns her attention to th

the other side of the table. Bennett removes his hand from mine so
days of both eat, but in between each course one of us reaches out to grab the
business I've never eaten so fast before. All to hold my best friend's hand.

question I'm not sure what to make of the fact that each time our hands touch
he past heart skips. Or that when his thumb starts to trace shapes over mine at

of the dessert course, desire for something more builds deep in me
the larger tingle, each spark is disconcerting and delicious all at once. I can't
feeling this way about anyone else.

Harold *I'm ... falling in love with Bennett.*

else will

old buck

downs

color in

couldn't

a long

o makes

be sure

her and

on his

ll these

nose on

the other side of the table. Bennett removes his hand from mine so we can both eat, but in between each course one of us reaches out to grab the other. I've never eaten so fast before. All to hold my best friend's hand.

I'm not sure what to make of the fact that each time our hands touch my heart skips. Or that when his thumb starts to trace shapes over mine at the end of the dessert course, desire for something more builds deep in me. Each tingle, each spark is disconcerting and delicious all at once. I can't recall feeling this way about anyone else.

I'm ... falling in love with Bennett.

CHAPTER 19

CHAPTER 19

Bennett St. James

Sophie is stunning. She's a burst of color in a sunset, the first bite of cream in summer, the feeling of coming home after being gone for a while. She's tantalizing and enchanting and intoxicating. Every muscle in my body is taught in an attempt to not interrupt her conversation and smash my lips against hers.

Something changed tonight. I feel it in every touch of her hand, in every look from her sultry gray eyes. When I was waiting for her outside the house tonight, I thought she might come up and tell me to leave. A part of me wondered if she'd show up with someone else. But she didn't. She showed up alone, looking as beautiful as ever, with a brokenness within that only years of knowing her made me able to notice.

After we talked, though, that layer of brokenness slipped away to reveal a roaring fire. She's grabbed my hand and pulled it to her knee more than once. She leaned into me countless times. I almost came undone when she traced my fingertips absentmindedly through the hair on my neck. She was in conversation, looking at ease and unaffected, all the while I was splintering the wooden chair while I gripped it.

Even now she seems intent on torturing me, snuggled into my side library of the hostess for tonight, Sylvie. Sylvie invited a select few people to stay behind for espresso and bonbons. Whitney wasn't one of them to my dismay—and my delight. Sylvie didn't hesitate to say she only has positive people in her home afterhours.

We've been talking to the loquacious old woman for hours, but it has gotten old. Others left, but we stayed. She told us about her and her husband's business. How they built their investment firm from the ground up and now she mostly sits back and watches it grow. She has plenty of children and grandchildren to run it, so she only works whenever she gets too bored of life on her own.

For days. I'm not sure how she's ever bored enough to work though, because she regales us with stories of backpacking by herself through Europe and learning about foreign cultures by living in the homes of the people she came across.

Sophie is enthralled, and I know she's found a new idol to look up to. I see it in her eyes. “And then I ate fresh tuna sashimi right on the boat they caught it outside of never tasted anything like it.” Sylvie finishes the story of hopping on a boat with some sports fisherman. Sophie's head is nestled against my shoulder. I feel her sigh.

Hidden “That sounds amazing. You've lived a beautiful life, Sylvie.”

“And I'm not done living it, so don't sound so sentimental.”

I laugh and Sophie does too.

“All of your food stories make me want to run to the nearest kitchen and start cooking,” Sophie says and Sylvie gestures with her demitasse cup toward the mid-library door.

“I've got two of 'em, you're welcome to either.”

“If you keep talking like that, she's never going to leave,” I joke.

She hits my chest lightly before settling her hand there.

“You like to cook?” Sylvie asks and I squeeze Sophie to my side. I haven’t talked business all night, but this is her chance. She certainly wants something big, no Whitney Cunningham in sight.

“I’m a chef, actually,” Sophie says and sits up out of my arm. I haven’t been disappointed until she lays one of her hands on my leg, as if she doesn’t want to be apart from me either. I draw lazy circles on her shoulder, enjoying the way she shivers under my touch.

“Really? I knew there was something I liked about you. I always get bored with chefs—they feed me.” She laughs wholeheartedly at her own joke.

Sophie giggles and my heart leaps at the sound of her so happy.

“I’ll have to come cook for you sometime, or you can come by my place and see my new food truck called Farm-To-Truck.”

Sylvie reaches over and grabs a brass pen from the table and scribbles on the notepad. “You’ll see me there.”

I believe her. Sylvie doesn’t seem like the kind of woman who would make someone feel better.

Sophie quiets down again, making me frown. This is her shot, will she go for it? Her hand on my knee is tight and even her side profile is tense. She must be nervous.

“She’s amazing,” I say and squeeze her arm. “I know I might be skeptical, but her food is phenomenal. So great, that she’s looking into franchising.” Sophie looks up at me with eyes as wide as the saucers our espresso cups are. “Do you already have investors?” Sylvie is straight to the point, and I give her a grin. I like her.

“No, ma’am, but I don’t want you to think we stayed just to convince you.”

I didn't even know you owned a firm until you told us a little while ago. We She waves her hand as if she's swatting away Sophie's apology. could do "I know you aren't trying to manipulate me. No one can anymore right through them. Tell me about your business." ns. I'm Sophie instantly rattles off her sales—which impress both Sylvie and I't want and her goals for the franchise and her love of local farmers and baking. At the end of her speech, I'm amazed she hasn't gotten further with investors. Her heart for the business is clear, and she has the data to back it along that she knows what she's doing. A beam of pride shoots through me in joke. best friend, for the one I love.

After Sophie is done, Sylvie stands up and walks over to a large desk in the corner of the room. There's a business card in her hands when she returns, which she hands to Sophie, her red nail polish glinting in the lamplight. I'm not afraid of color, that's for sure.

"Give me a call and we can set up an appointment to talk shop. I'd be glad to lie to you've got the investment already, but my kids get all up in arms when they don't at least bring someone in before going off my gut feelings." Sylvie isn't her eyes. "Little do they know that this gut of mine built those skyscrapers they work in."

"Thank you, Sylvie. I'm looking forward to working with you." I'm biased, the newfound confidence in Sophie's words. "You should, I'm the best." She winks and we all laugh. "Now, you lovebirds get out of here. I've got all my grandkids coming over tomorrow and I need all the sleep I can get."

I appreciate that she doesn't skirt around asking us to leave. It's refreshing after spending the past month with high society snobs.

"Thank you again. Your home is lovely and dinner was wonderful."

o.” pulls Sophie into a hug, and me into one right after.

“Thank you for coming. These parties are usually so I can people e. I see and keep an eye on those who want to work with me, but tonight, I a had fun.” She gives us a meaningful look. “Don’t let all these nd me—grubbers smother your light.”

ies. By “We won’t,” I say with a finality that Sylvie’s smile shows she ap h other of.

ack up She leads us outside, hands us our keys, and tells us our cars are par for my front since the valet left a long time ago. We exchange goodbyes ar we’re back in the courtyard alone, Sophie squeals.

k in the “I did it!” She jumps in my arms and I spin her around, laughing.

returns, “You were *incredible*, Soph,” I say into her ear as I set her down. H t. She’s slides down mine and I keep her close, my hands pressed against h through the thin satin of her dress.

tell you “I couldn’t have done it without you,” she says and presses her fa never my chest when she hugs me tight. I hold her to me, bringing one han he roll the back of her neck.

e fancy “You could have, and you did. Nothing about that in there had to c me. You worked hard up until now and you just being you was impres grin at kiss the crown of her head, the sweet floral scent in her hair reminding running with her through the garden as kids.

ou two “Mush,” she whispers and I chuckle. It feels too good to have her in the arms. My thumb begins to trace formless patterns on the back of he and I relish the way her breath catches in response. She doesn’t mov reshing or tell me to stop. I’m soaring once again toward the sun, and I pray come crashing down this time.

’ Sylvie Suddenly, she nuzzles into the space where my shirt buttons are u

her nose brushing my skin in a way that makes me inhale sharply.

watch “I’ve wanted to do that all night,” she whispers into my skin, sending a shiver actually down my spine.

money “You have?” I rasp out and feel her smile against me. I’m supposed to be the one who holds her up, but if she keeps this going she might have to drop me to the bench to sit. There’s no way I’ll be able to stay standing.

“You’re tempting, Bennett St. James,” she murmurs, and I wonder if she got into the wine when I wasn’t looking. Could she really mean it? “Says the woman who looks like she poured herself into that dress the first time, I’m bold in my flirtation, and my heart pounds hard against my ribcage.

Her head lifts from my chest and she looks up at me. It’s dark out, but the back courtyard isn’t brightly lit, but I can see the desire swimming in her eyes. I want to pull her in, but I can’t. She has to make the first move. I worry I’ve lost her choice away, not when she was so scared before. She needs to know that she’ll always be safe with me.

Her fingers begin sifting through my hair on the back of my head. Her hands move over my face as if she’s working through a puzzle. I let every desire I have inside of me come to the surface. I’m an open book for her to read. “Do you remember what Sylvie said? About marriage?” she whispers into my ear the night.

“I do,” I say, and the irony of the phrase isn’t lost on me.

“You make me laugh.” The anticipation buzzing through my veins is away stronger than any alcohol I’ve ever tried. Every brush of her fingertips sends a jolt of electricity, sending pulses of awareness through my body.

“You make me laugh too.” My words come out like my throat is raw and done, sandpaper. I’m trying so hard to control myself around her. She’s my

come to life. She knows me better than anyone, and if she kisses me t
g chillsif she admits to feeling even a fraction of what I feel for her, then I'l
that this is it. There's nothing hidden from her. The only thing hidde
d to bemy own feelings, and I'm wearing those like a banner right now in ho
to carrieshe'll respond.

“Do you think if we kissed, we'd feel something?” Sophie has as
brieflythousands of questions over the course of our friendship. Some hav
this? normal, others outrageous. There's been plenty of times I haven't kno
s.” Foranswer to what she asks. This isn't one of those times.

inst my “Yes.”

“How are you so sure?”

and the I want to push her against the nearest wall and show her, but I
eyes. Ivulnerability in her gaze, and it makes me pause.

it steal “Because, when you look at me it sends a shock straight to my hea
o knowa defibrillator pressed to my chest.” I slide my hand from her neck to

her jaw, daring to let my thumb graze her bottom lip. She breathes in
ler eyesthe contact. “It's like we're attached to each other by a live wire. Do y
:motionit?”

read. I'm being vulnerable now too, letting my armor down. She could p
ers intoknife right into me. Push me straight into the abyss of heartbreak wit
word.

“Yes.” That one syllable whisper sends my heart into overdrive.

veins is Her hands slide down to my collar and all it takes is a singular tug t
is pureme press my mouth to hers. The first brush of our lips is like striking a

and then we're kissing, tangled up in each other, set ablaze. She's soft
nade oflike the satin she's wrapped up in tonight, but then her fingers clench
7 dreamfabric of my shirt.

tonight, Our kisses become desperate and greedy. It feels like we've waited all knowwhole lives for this, and in a way we have. My fingers find their way into her hair, tugging at the strands as I sift through them the way I've been desperate for about for months. A soft sound comes from the back of her throat, a low moan that ignites flames of desire across my skin. My teeth graze her bottom lip in a way that's almost painful, then I'm diving into her again—lost in her without a care in the world. I've been returning to the surface. She wraps her arms around my neck and kisses me like the world is crumbling around us and we only have one night left to live. Her kisses taste like rich chocolate and my future.

I pull away, pressing kisses down her jaw, each one a declaration of my love. *mine, mine.* When I kiss the space below her ear she grabs my face and looks at me, her eyes see the same back, her fevered kisses taking control to where all I'm thinking is about her. *yours, yours.*

right. Like We breathe heavily when we finally break apart, our foreheads pressed together. If someone checked my pulse right now they'd diagnose me with a deep tachycardia, my heart is beating so fast.

How do you feel “That was—I mean—” I stutter and Sophie giggles, the sound makes me feel like I'm floating.

I lunge at her “Perfect,” she whispers. “It was perfect.” Her lips brush mine and she looks at me just as tenderly. I want to kiss her again. The yearning is overwhelming, but I know where we are.

“We should probably go,” I say and it's like she comes back to earth, her eyebrows raising in surprise.

It's a match “Yes, we should,” she laughs. “Sylvie is probably watching from the window somewhere.”

into the “Let's hope not.”

We both laugh and I walk her to her car slowly, not wanting the night to end.

ted our end. If she gets in her car and leaves, will she start to regret what hap
into her We stay silent as we walk, her hand in mine. She hasn't said anythin
reaming her feelings, but if her kiss is any indication ... I think I'm the luckiest
sending alive. Still, I worry that the moment was just that—a moment.

I breathe “Ben.” Sophie squeezes my hand. We're at our cars now, and
care for looking up at me with eyes that see right through me. “Don't overthin
esses me She takes a deep breath, seemingly steadying herself. “There's ob
eft. She more between us. I might take some time catching up to you, but I wa
I want *you*.”

n *mine*, I pull her to me and kiss her again, every cell in my body on fire wit
I brings I'm about to deepen the kiss when cold water hits my back and sides.
s *yours*, gasps into the kiss, then pulls away and squeals. The sprinklers have
on where we're standing, spraying us from all directions.

pressed I try to shield her, but it's no use. The sprinklers are right next to
ne with throws her head back and laughs in my arms. I can feel her skin
chilling. It's still cold mid-February in Georgia with no sun to lessen t
me feel “You're going to freeze to death if you stay out here much longer
over the sound of the water. “You need to go home.” I kiss her foreh
e again she grins.

I realize “You take care of me.”

“Always,” I say and mean it. She slides into her car, rolling do
rth, her window. I block the sprinkler spray from getting in.

“Text me when you get home. I love you.” The words fall out e
from a used to hold them in for special occasions, never wanting them to lo
meaning. But now I can see myself saying them all the time. They'l
lose meaning when it comes to Sophie.

right to “I love you too.” She gives me a quick kiss, her lips wet.

opened? My stomach swoops because I know the meaning of those words about changing for Sophie too. I may have slowed us down by hiding my deepest feelings, but I know that we're meant to be more. And now I know she agrees.

And she's... She drives away and I stand there, drenched to the bone and grinning like a fool, because my best friend *kissed me* tonight. I'm so glad we want people to know we're dating. If I had to hide it, everyone would just have to try to guess. Look at me to know how bad I've got it. And I don't even care, I do it so bad.

And I want. *Look out everybody, because I'm all in, crazy in love with Sophie Cunningham.*

She turned

to us. She

was already

going to bite.

"I say

head and

own the

easily. I

use their

will never

My stomach swoops because I know the meaning of those words is changing for Sophie too. I may have slowed us down by hiding my own feelings, but I know that we're meant to be more. And now I know she agrees.

She drives away and I stand there, drenched to the bone and grinning like a fool, because my best friend *kissed me* tonight. I'm so glad we want people to know we're dating. If I had to hide it, everyone would just have to take one look at me to know how bad I've got it. And I don't even care, I do have it bad.

Look out everybody, because I'm all in, crazy in love with Sophie Cunningham.

CHAPTER 20

CHAPTER 20

Sophie Cunningham

When rays of morning light hit my face, my first waking thought is E Okay, it's actually wondering why my blinds are open to let the brig in, but Bennett is the *second* thought. I kick my feet under the cov grin. I kissed Bennett last night. And oh, it was good. The best kiss life. All other kisses were a waste of time. If given the choice I'd choi kiss from Ben over a thousand from any other guy. *Including* Ryan Go fact I'm sure Bennett would smirk if he heard.

I reach over to my nightstand and slide my phone off the wireless c The screen comes to life with various notifications, but there's o makes my heart somersault.

Ben: Good morning, beautiful. Are you working today?

I squeal and sit up in my bed. I'm way too giddy over a good morni It must be residual energy from the kiss last night.

Sophie: Good morning <3 I'm working the truck tonight Thrashers' basketball game. Why?

Ben: It's a surprise. Pick you up at 12 PM?

I bite my lip as I type out my response.

Sophie: Sounds good!

Ben: It's a date.

I push up to standing on my bed, jumping and giggling like a friend who just got asked to the prom. My door swings open, slowly. I jump. MJ stands in the doorway with raised brows.

“What are you doing?”

“Exercising?” I try but can't even keep a straight face. It's not like I'm going to hide anything from them. Standing on my bed, I can clearly see MJ's short stature. Which means I see Grace and Wyatt, then Lottie and Callum, come to stand behind her and stare at me.

Bennett. I'd stare too if I caught one of them in their pajamas, sporting bedhead. They imitated a kangaroo in their bedroom.

“We heard you squealing in here. What happened?” Lottie asks, always on the hunt for information about her best friends.

I press my lips together, but it's no use. I can't contain it any longer. This feels like a moment the guys don't need to be here for.

“I kissed Bennett last night!” I blurt out and Lottie's mouth drops open. She grins big, while MJ gives the tiniest of smiles. The guys are grinning too. I know they're going to mess with Bennett later.

“Tell us *everything*,” Lottie demands and pulls me off the bed. I stumble a little on the ground, but the girls catch me, all of us laughing.

“I didn't realize I'd have this big of an audience so early.” It makes me wish Bennett was here. These are our shared friends, after all. *Should we wait to announce our new relationship together? Did he want to lay low for a while, announce our new relationship together?* I glance down at my phone. *Is calling him weird?*

“We invited everyone over for brunch. We didn't invite Bennett because we didn't know how things were with you all yet,” Grace says.

“I appreciate that.” I look at my phone again. *He’s my best friend call him.* “I’ll tell y’all in a minute, let me make a quick call.”

eshman “Awww, she’s going to call him. Do you remember those days, Sterling myLottie looks up at her husband Callum with a grin. They used to call each other by their last names, and still do occasionally. It’s the cutest when she calls her Sterling back. She turns into an absolute puddle.

ike I’m “Yes, I miss those days. Back when I didn’t wake up to you poking me over telling me you’re bored and want coffee,” he teases and she hits his arm. tie and “You love it,” she says it more like a command than a question.

“I love you,” he says and kisses the crown of her head. She goes all head aseyed and MJ starts to push the group out of the room.

“Come on, let her make her call. I need space too, all this lovey dovey monis going to make me gag.”

I laugh at all of their grumbles and mouth *thank you* to MJ before the door even closes my door. The phone rings twice before I hear Bennett’s voice.

“Hey gorgeous, missing me already?” I roll my eyes at his question. . Gracethat the butterflies in my stomach are answering a resounding yes.

oo, and “No,” I lie and he chuckles. “I’m calling because everyone is having breakfast, and I *might* have told them we kissed.”

imble a “Everyone as in...?”

“As in *everyone*—even Wyatt is here from Sweet Oak. But I didn’t tell them the whole story because I wasn’t sure if you wanted me to.” I pull the blanket I have a loose thread on my bed sheets.

ionship “Do you want to tell them?”

I narrow my eyes at his turning the tables. “You tell me first.”

because “I want you to be in charge here, Soph. If it was up to me, I’d blast it on every social media platform, call all our friends, and jump on the nearest rock

l, I can shout it out.”

I giggle as I picture him screaming from his apartment rooftop. “Want to tell them?” “I want to tell them.” I pause. “But I’d like it better if you were all here to understand if it’s too needy of me though—”

He cuts me off. “Don’t downplay what you want, Sophie. I want to see you happy. Will it make you happy if I come over right now?”

“Yes,” I whisper.

“Then I’ll be there in fifteen minutes.” He pauses, his tone softer. “I love you, Sophie. I know it might take some time for you to believe in me, but I’m always going to put you first.”

I blink back tears, tired of crying but too happy to stifle them completely. After being with Michael, it’s hard to believe I’m worth someone doing what they’re doing and coming to me just because.

“Thank you.”

“Expect more of this, Sophie. Expect more in general. You deserve to be loved, not hated. My heart is trying to soar, but it’s like a bird attached to a chair. I can’t go far without hearing the words of those who hurt me.”

“Mush,” I quietly say and bite my lip. “I’ll try.”

“That’s my girl. I’ll see you soon.”

We hang up and I smile down at my phone. Maybe I can break out of my chains of doubt with Bennett by my side. I know why I love him, but it’s hard to understand why he loves me.

The sound of laughter in the other room brings me out of my thoughts. I’ll have time to work through all that. For today, I can enjoy being with all my best friends. I make my way into the kitchen, where my friend is making a parfait in a small mason jar. She looks up from spooning coconut milk yogurt and gives me a small smile.

“Is he on his way?” I nod and her smile grows. “Everyone has started eating, but there’s plenty for him when he gets here.”

here. I “Thanks, MJ.”

I pause in the doorway, watching her layer homemade granola and a makeshift yogurt. She’s about to walk into a room filled with couples, doesn’t look sad. I don’t think she needs a man, she stands on her own just fine, but I hope for love for her. She’s never been upfront about her feelings, but I’ve seen her eyes glued to the sweet scenes in romance movies, but a small smile tugging on her lips. Under her gruff exterior is likely a girl who wants to find love like the rest of us.

pletely. “I’m sorry I broke our man ban,” I say, and she shrugs, licking some yogurt off the side of her mason jar.

“I figured you would. I knew Bennett was in love with you, remember?”

“So are you going to give up too, then? Find some weird performance artist to date?”

She glares at me, stabbing a spoon into the parfait. “I’m not giving up. Also, I don’t appreciate the tone around performance art.”

“If you can look at me and tell me performance art isn’t weird 99% of the time, then I’ll change my tone.”

She levels me with a look that would probably scare most people, but I know her, I don’t back down.

“Normal is boring,” she says instead of refuting. I can’t help but laugh. “I have purple hair, I obviously agree with you. I’m just saying, you’ve dated the same kinds of guys and end up breaking it off because you found a new muse or asked you to be a *certain type* of model.” I shrug. “You can be fully clothed and have your portrait painted if you wanted to be painted by this guy.”

already “Which is why I’m keeping the man ban in place.” The finality in her tone lets me know she’s done talking about it. I shouldn’t have pushed her to tease her so much. Teasing is one of our friendship’s love languages, but on this topic it might be more off limits than I originally thought.

but she “Okay, good for you. As long as that’s what you really want.” I watch her wince and there’s a flicker of emotion, but that’s all I’m given before she turns around to leave.

movies, “It is.”

woman She leaves me alone in the kitchen. While I fill my plate with bread and food, I think about how I wish MJ would open up a little more. She’s always been a stray up to me when it comes to grief, but even then it feels like she’s just comforting me. We’ve all tried to break through her shell, but she just shrugs. “Keep most everyone at arm’s length. The only way we’ve been able to get her into sharing with us is by asking questions about her art.

It’s easy to see that she uses art to release her emotions, but there’s something about her that just keeps her up. Much a painting can hold. I worry that she’s lonely unnecessarily, but I don’t want to force her to reveal anything about herself. Maybe if she meets the right person, some of those walls will come down. I decide to pray about it for her. Not even for a romantic relationship, but just *someone* to break through. I feel better about it, I drizzle syrup over my Belgian waffle.

The sound of a door opening makes my pulse kick up. Bennett’s voice carries down the hall to where I am, almost making me drop my plate. I’m being so excited to see him. Footsteps head toward me and I unashamedly wait by the counter, watching the doorway for him to appear.

As I watch, I can’t contain my smile when he enters the kitchen, his grin matched by his own. He’s dressed more casual than usual, in a black v-neck that matches the one I stole from him and—*someone get me a fan*—gray sweatpants. It’s

ner tonelocked into a woman's DNA to feel a little warm when a guy wear
her orthings. Well, maybe not *every* woman's, but *this* woman's for sure.

ges, but His green eyes are like tumbled jade stones, bright and shiny. I
plate down as he walks toward me and cages me against the cabinets
itch herme. He dips his head down and gives me an agonizingly soft kiss.
e walksthink I wouldn't mind this being a daily occurrence. I slide my hands
chest and around his neck.

"It seems like you missed me," Bennett teases and I bite my lip. H
reakfastfollow the movement, turning my stomach upside down with the de
openeddisplay in his gaze.

mostly "I could say the same about you," I breathe.

likes to "Is it too cheesy to say I did miss you?"

to coax I smile and shake my head. "No, it's not."

"Good, because I did." He pulls me to him and buries his face in n
only soCalmness washes over me and I hold him tight. The worries about him
: I can'tme feel less prominent when he holds me like this. They're not gone,
ie rightright touch pushes them to the recesses of my mind, and I'm able to relax.

that for "They're going to come looking for us if we don't go out there," I r
hrough.into his shoulder and he sighs, his breath tickling my neck.

. "You're right. I'll have you this afternoon, anyway. I shouldn't
s voiceselfish."

te from "I like it when you're selfish," I say as he pulls back. He grins and p
amedlysweet kiss to my lips. "But I don't want to have an audience."

"You go into the living room and start the story, I'll grab some food
uing myright behind you," he says and starts to step back but I fist my hand
:hes theshirt. He glances down at my hands rumpling the fabric. "Don't ruin tl
like it's

It's those it's the only black t-shirt I've got left. *Someone* stole my other one and he smirks down at me.

My skin flushes when he gives me a meaningful look. The kind of look that says he's imagining me in the shirt I took. "It's in my room if you want it. Yes, I'm willing to give it back to you."

"I didn't say that." His gaze is molten. He kisses me again and I push him away to stop us both. He tries to grab me as I'm walking away. I twist out of his grasp, giggling.

"I'll be yours in just a few hours," I say, but when I meet his eyes I know that I'm already his right here and now. He runs a hand through his hair and smirks like he's thinking the exact same thing. I leave the kitchen before he can reach for me again, pressing my fingertips to my tingling lip and letting my hand drop when I walk into the living room.

"Oh, they were so making out in there. Pay up." Lottie holds out a loving hand in Wyatt's direction.

"You don't know that. No one would go check on them to make sure." Sophie has to tell us or no bet." All eyes are on me and I feel heat crawl up my neck to my face.

"She's blushing." Grace laughs from under Wyatt's arm. "You're going to have to sobe out five dollars, Cowboy."

"She can blush without it being true. That's not proof." Lottie and Wyatt's competitive natures are usually entertaining for me, but today they are to my detriment.

Bennett walks in the room carrying the plate I left behind in one hand and his own in the other. He hands me my plate, kisses my temple, and then sits on his one, an open seat on the couch.

"What are we talking about?" he asks as he settles in. I'm still fr

ie.” He place, not used to this much attention to any of my romantic relations.

The girls didn’t exactly love Michael, so over time they talked less and less about him. To be fair, so did I. Bennett tugs on the edge of my pajama top, wanting to nodding to me to sit down next to him, so I do.

“Were you and Sophie making out in the kitchen?” Lottie asks me directly, almost making me throw my plate. Bennett’s lips curl up in a sly, but smile.

“Define making out.” My mouth drops when he winks at me, meaning I know all of our friends go crazy. Wyatt and Lottie argue loudly while Callum and Bennett an air high five. Grace is laughing at her best friend and before he fighting. MJ is snickering nearby. And I’m glaring at Bennett while his cheeks flame.

“I can’t believe you,” I say and he kisses my warm cheekbone. “You know you love how crazy they are. I had to play into it. Look at go.” He gestures with his fork to Wyatt animatedly defending his side, sure, so dragging Callum into it. Callum initially agrees with Wyatt, which keeps up Lottie turn her piercing blue stare on him. Their teasing quickly moves into the flirting territory, though, and Wyatt ends up throwing the five dollars to Lottie to get them to stop.

I laugh and lean into Bennett’s side. He’s right, I do love this. I love Wyatt’s seven more for being apart of it.

to my

nd, and

in takes

ozen in

place, not used to this much attention to any of my romantic relationships. The girls didn't exactly love Michael, so over time they talked less and less about him. To be fair, so did I. Bennett tugs on the edge of my pajama shirt, nodding to me to sit down next to him, so I do.

"Were you and Sophie making out in the kitchen?" Lottie asks him directly, almost making me throw my plate. Bennett's lips curl up in a slow smile.

"Define making out." My mouth drops when he winks at me, meanwhile all of our friends go crazy. Wyatt and Lottie argue loudly while Callum gives Bennett an air high five. Grace is laughing at her best friend and fiancé fighting. MJ is snickering nearby. And I'm glaring at Bennett while my cheeks flame.

"I can't believe you," I say and he kisses my warm cheekbone.

"You know you love how crazy they are. I had to play into it. Look at them go." He gestures with his fork to Wyatt animatedly defending his stance, dragging Callum into it. Callum initially agrees with Wyatt, which makes Lottie turn her piercing blue stare on him. Their teasing quickly moves into the flirting territory, though, and Wyatt ends up throwing the five dollars at Lottie to get them to stop.

I laugh and lean into Bennett's side. He's right, I do love this. I love him even more for being apart of it.

CHAPTER 21

CHAPTER 21

Bennett St. James

“You’re cute when you’re nervous.” Sophie reaches over and taps my hand while I’m driving. I give her a playful glare, then turn my attention to the road.

“I’m not nervous.” I’m so nervous. This is our first real date, and I want to be perfect. Sophie has been through so much in the past, so I want to see that she’s deserving of love and grand gestures.

“Mhmm. That’s why your leg is bouncing so much, because you’re nervous.” I still my left leg, instead opting to clench my toes. “I bet if I told me where we were going you’d be less nervous.”

I grin at her attempt to crack me. Ever since she got in the car minutes ago she’s been needling me for information about where we’re going and what we’re doing. I’ve stayed strong so far, but I know she won’t until we’re there.

“Not happening, Soph.” She groans and lets her head hit the headrest dramatically.

“You drive me crazy,” she says and I glance over at her when we come to a red light. Her hair is in a messy knot on her head, and she’s do-

makeup in this smudged sort of way that makes her look like a rock p
When she walked out smirking in my t-shirt and a pair of ripped dar
jeans, I wondered if we'd make it through our date tonight, or if we'd
kissing in my car until time for her to go to work. The jury is still out v
pouty lips looking so kissable next to me.

“The feeling is mutual,” I say in a husky tone that has her blushin
instant. A heady rush of satisfaction rolls over me, and it's heightene
the color of her cheeks deepens as I place my hand on her knee.

She looks out the window, her questions stalling for the m
Instinctively, my thumb sweeps along the exposed skin of her knee
ry noseripped jeans. I've never cared much about fashion, but I'm than
back to whoever invented distressed jeans today. They get my support, ever
Nana thinks they're a waste of good pants.

want it “If I guess where we're going, will you tell me?” I laugh when
t her to speaks again.

“Yes, if you guess, I'll tell you.” She'll never guess.

i're not “You're taking me to the botanical gardens for a picnic.”

t if you “The cherry blossoms aren't blooming yet, so no.” She smiles big,
her hand over mine. She's always loved cherry blossoms. Her dad wou
fifteenher to walk the gardens each spring when they were at their peak.

e going “Hmm ... you're taking me to an escape room.”

t let up “You figured it out,” I say and she gasps. “I'm kidding. That woul
much of a surprise if it was so easy to guess.” She rolls her eyes.

seatrest “Fine, you're driving me to New Orleans to go see that seria
museum!” She sounds actually excited about this one—her love for tru
ome to worries me at times—and I shake my head at her.

one her “There's no way I could get you back by the time you needed to wo

rincess. She sighs as if it's the biggest disappointment in the world.

'k wash "I guess you'll just have to add that to the list of your potential surpr
end up "Is this your way of telling me you'd like to go there?" I ra
vith hereyebrows.

"Maybe."

g in an I snort. "Subtle, Soph. Real subtle." My fingers pinch above her
d whentickle her and she squeals, pushing my hand away.

"Stop it!" She giggles. "Or else I'm revoking your touching privileg
moment. "Is that so? I'd like to see you try." I tickle her a few more times b
: in herbecomes a major distraction and focus on driving. "We're almost th
kful to you can stop guessing now."

1 if my "Aw I was having fun guessing. I didn't even give my most rid
ones yet."

Sophie "You can tell me more over lunch," I say as I park in front of the
refurbished brick building. Sophie leans forward in her seat to look u
sign. When she reads it, her brows draw together.

"Amelio's? It's not open yet."

placing "Not for everyone else. For us, it is." Her eyes get big and she g
ld takehand.

"You didn't." I lift her hand to my lips and kiss it.

"We're going to be the first to eat at Amelio Ortega's ex
dn't berestaurant."

"Bennett," she whispers.

I killer "Come on, before we miss our reservation."

e crime I get out of the car and walk over to open the door for Sophie,
currently staring straight ahead and not moving.

rk." "Do I need to unbuckle your seatbelt again?" I tease, but she doesn'

“I can’t go inside.”

ises.” “What? Haven’t you wanted to eat his food for months now?”

ise my “Yes! Which is why I cannot go in. I’m wearing your *t-shirt* and it looks like a racoon might pop out of it any second. I’m not fit to go in. What if he wants to *meet* us?” I chuckle and lean against the truck.

knee to “I’m counting on it, considering I asked him to.” She whips her head and looks at me like I just told her I was moving to Antarctica for the rest of my life.” “Also, you’re gorgeous, Soph. Everything about you makes me want to be with you. I’m sure Amelio will think the same. On second thought, I think we should leave. We need to take you back home so you can change a little less appealing.”

liculous I make a move like I’m going to close her door and she grabs my hand laughing.

e newly “You’re ridiculous.”

p at the “You’re making us late,” I say and she bites her lip. After another moment of hesitation, she unbuckles her seatbelt and gets out of the car.

“How on earth did you get us in before the grand opening?” I place my hand on her back and lead her down the sidewalk to the small restaurant. I took a few calls, and some namedropping, but I was able to get us the best dining experience I knew Sophie would be excited over.

clusive “I hate using my last name, but ...”

“But you did for this?”

“I did it for you.” I look down at her. She’s biting her lip and staring at me. “If you tell me you don’t deserve it I’m going to tickle you again, who’s laughing, shaking her head.

“Can I say it’s too much?” She asks as I open the door for her. The spices scent the air in the restaurant.

“No, nothing is too much when it comes to you.” I wrap an arm around her shoulder and pull her to me, kissing the side of her head.

A hostess looks up from where she’s wrapping silverware in linen napkins there. “Dr. St. James?” She asks and I nod. “You and your wife can follow me to the bar. *My wife*. I don’t mind the sound of that. When I look at Sophie, I know she’d smile tells me she might not either.

We follow the hostess to a table set with a white table cloth, a vase holding a single red rose in the center. Sophie slides into the buttery leather booth and I do the same across from her.

“Would you like to see a menu or have the chef prepare his choice for you?” The woman asks and I look to Sophie, nodding my head to indicate my choice.

“Whatever the chef decides will be perfect,” Sophie says. There’s a giddiness in her voice. The hostess nods, then tells us she’ll also be our waitress today and will be back with our drinks shortly.

When the server disappears to the back, Sophie bounces in her seat. “I cannot believe we’re here, and that you remembered I wanted to dine here. I told you forever ago when I saw that he was opening a restaurant in Atlanta.”

“I wanted our first date to be memorable.”

“You could have taken me through a drive thru and it would have been memorable. I’m with you, that’s all that matters.”

Her eyes meet mine and I’m contemplating how frowny she looks when she slides in the booth next to her and kiss until our food comes. The crease smudged around her eyes intensifies her already alluring irises, turning them the color of summer storm clouds. I could stare into them for the rest of the night.

and her life, noting how they change in different lighting, committing to not
every shift in color.

napkins. “I love that you don’t care about frivolous things, but I’m going
for me.” them to you anyway. Whatever I can give, I will.” She ducks her head
her shy blush.

The server returns, balancing our lemon waters and the first dish,
holding “For your appetizer, the chef has prepared croquetas de jamón.” She
r booth white dish on the table with what looks like thick mozzarella sticks

After confirming we don’t need anything else, she leaves again.
nice for “Do you know what these are?” I ask and Sophie laughs, pulling
to take it’s them onto her appetizer plate.

“Ham croquettes. They’re made with mashed potatoes and bechar
note of ham. I had them a lot when I went to Miami for spring break in col
r server nod and grab one for my plate.

I watch as she bites into the croquette. Sophie doesn’t shade her re
when eating, ever. She *loves* food and it’s very clear when she’s eating
I to eat eyes close and she hums as she chews. A grin breaks out across n
unt here seeing her enjoy herself.

Her eyes flutter open, catching me watching her.

“Don’t watch me while I’m eating! You’re making me self-conscious
I’ve been “I like watching you. You’re adorable.” Another blush blossoms
cheeks.

could be “Stop making me blush.”

eyeliner “Never.”

ing them She rolls her eyes, but I can tell she’s biting back a smile.

t of my “You haven’t even taken a bite yet.” She gestures to my plate. I pick
croquette and take a bite, crunching through the fried exterior. The

memory center is savory and delicious and I can see why Sophie reacted the way she did.

to give “It’s fantastic,” I say.

to hide “Amelio grew up in Spain and trained with the top chefs there and then traveled through France and Italy after culinary school. He came to the States with nothing, and now he’s won a James Beard award and owns several restaurants.” A small smile plays on her lips. She looks down at her phone. “I really can’t get over that we’re here, Ben. This place is booked months in advance from opening, and with my work schedule, I thought it would be impossible to get in before I could get in.”

Her hand reaches out and covers mine on the table.

and “No one has ever been so thoughtful when doing something for me. Thank you so much.” I know how to make it up to you.”

A rush of mixed emotions burns through me. I know that Sophie directed this mindset on her own. Her mother probably pushed the idea that she needed to prove herself to be loved on her, and Michael likely cemented this in my face. I think of all the times he said something off or didn’t treat her the way she deserved and regret settles heavy in my stomach. I should have broken the relationship talk rule and said something. But we’re here now, that’s the reality. “I won’t let Michael’s mistake harm Sophie any longer.

on her “Sophie, there’s no such thing as *making it up to me*. I know we were fake dating about keeping score, but that was all it was, Ben. There are no scoreboards here. I don’t expect anything in return for this.”

The server comes before she can respond.

“For your main course, the chef presents Paella de Marisco.” She sets up the large skillet of yellow rice topped with different kinds of seafood doused in a creamy

way she gives us larger plates and serving utensils. “Enjoy.” I give her a polite smile as she turns away.

Sophie toys with the edge of the tablecloth, avoiding my eyes. “Soph, tell me what’s going on in that beautiful mind of yours.” A hesitant smile touches her lips.

“I don’t know how to do this.”

“Do what?”

“Be loved.”

Her eyes lift, and they’re shining with tears. I immediately slide out of the booth and go to hers. I draw her into my arms, rubbing her back. She sniffles and my heart breaks. Pulling back, I take her face in my hands and press a soft kiss to her lips.

“I want to be better at receiving love I just- I don’t-” I cut her off before she can’t get another kiss.

“It’s okay, Soph. You don’t have to get it all right now. I want you to be better, not *be* better. Because this is more about you healing from the way she than becoming someone different for my sake.” I pull her back in for a moment, her floral scent mixing with the spices from the dishes in front of us.

“I just want you, and I all I want is for you to be who you were made to be and loved as you are. That’s my sole agenda. No scoreboards, no ulterior motives. Just you and me.”

“I like the sound of that.”

“Yeah?” Warmth pools in my chest when she hugs me tighter.

“Yeah.” She pulls back out of the hug. “Thank you, Ben. I don’t know what to say besides that I love you.” I smile and brush my thumb across her forehead, then cheekbone.

“You act like those three words don’t make my whole world brighter.”

the smiletime you say them.” She gives me a teary-eyed smile. “Feel better?”

“Much better,” she replies and her eyes are drawn to the food.

“I’m guessing you’re ready to eat then.” I chuckle when she gives me an enthusiastic nod. “Are we going to be the weird couple who eats on the other side of the booth or am I going back to my side?”

“Would you stay over here if I asked?”

“That depends, is it a prank or something that would make you happy?” She shoves my shoulder and laughs.

“Pranks make me happy.” I give her a look. “*But* this isn’t a prank because I’m being close to you.”

“I like being close to you too.” I smirk and lean in to kiss her, but she pulls away, pressing her fingertips to my lips.

“If this paella gets cold before my first bite I might cry again.” I lean in against her fingertips, press a kiss to them, then lean back.

“No more tears, let’s eat.”

Halfway through our—insanely delicious—meal, Chef Amelio walks over to give me a hug, our table. Since he’s in his sixties, it’s easier to quell my jealousy that I love him when Sophie stares up at him like he hung the moon.

“Are you enjoying your meal?” His voice is deep, and coated in a Spanish accent that reveals his roots.

“Yes! Chef, this is amazing. I feel like I’ve traveled all of Spain with this meal. You have a gift,” Sophie gushes, and Amelio gives a humble nod.

“Your joy brings me joy. The vision for this restaurant was just to whisk my patrons away to Spain. My home’s cuisine is still my favorite, and I wanted to bring a bit of that home with me.”

“You’ve done just that. It really is wonderful, and your story has inspired me.”

me so much.”

“I’m so glad. Please, continue to enjoy your meal. I will have your server bring out your dessert shortly.” He gives another nod, then disappears back. Sophie still looks a little starstruck even after he’s gone.

“Should I be concerned that you’re going to run away to Spain with me?” I joke, making her scrunch her nose.

“Don’t be silly. You might have to worry about me never leaving the restaurant though.” I soak in her laughter and smiles. *Wow, I love this so much. I like so much.*

Our server brings out a plate of miniature churro bites, with a side of chocolate sauce. Sophie goes to grab a churro bite, but I stop her.

“Allow me.” A flush of red comes over her face, but her eyes are laughing. I laugh and happy.

I take the churro, dip it in the chocolate and lift it to her mouth. She takes a bite, her lips brushing my fingertips and sending a shiver through me. Her eyes flutter closed and she licks the cinnamon sugar left on her lips. When her eyes open again, there’s a teasing glint to them.

I eat the other half of the churro then lick the sugar off my thumb. Her eyes darken with something that resembles desire. She grabs my shirt collar and pulls me down into a searing kiss. I almost deepen it, but stop before she is carried away.

“Are you trying to get us kicked out?” I rasp, and she flashes a seductive smile that tests my will power.

The desire within me swirls and combines with the love in my heart. I’m overwhelmed with how perfect this moment is. I’ve never felt this about anyone before, but I’m not scared of it.

With Sophie, all I want is more. More laughter, kisses, time, just r

her.

r server

ars into

1 him?"

ng this

woman

of rich

e warm

takes a

ne. Her

. When

ler eyes

llar and

we get

s me a

art and

is way

nore of

her.

CHAPTER 22

CHAPTER 22

Sophie Cunningham

Tonight is the last ball I'm required to attend to complete the deal with my mother. We're back in Savannah and being around Bennett's family has had a kind of healing I didn't know I needed. Their constant encouragement and gentle teasing has had me smiling and feeling at home. No one is holding a fake relationship against us. I think everyone is honestly just happy it's all out the way it did. I know I am.

One of the Velcro curlers I pinned in my hair begins to fall, so I really want to look my best tonight, even with the awful dress I'm going to wear. My mother mailed me a gown that looks like someone stole my grandmother's doilies and made a dress out of them. Sighing, I turn to the vanity chair I'm sitting on to look at it where it hangs on the back of the door.

It's made of a dull pink lace. There's no shape to it. It's essentially a sack. It's ugly as sin, as Bennett's nana would say—and did say when she showed it to me. The note was uglier than the dress, if you ask me.

Sophie, it would be nice if you could wear something presentable to the ball. Something that would do your father's namesake good. I've included a note with the dress I think he would have approved of.

Yeah. *That* was fun to read.

I was so young when my dad died, not even a teenager yet, so I had no idea what dresses he would have approved of in actuality. He was a man, but he also encouraged me to play with boys like Bennett when I was younger, even when I was wearing expensive dresses.

Bennett frowned when I showed him the dress earlier, but he didn't say anything. I didn't show him the note. I know he would just get angry because he doesn't understand why I want to please her. He's never had to earn anything from his parents.

I know that my mom wants to control me, but she also wants to be close to me. If I wear the dress, I might honor my dad's memory and have a relationship with my mother not tainted by disapproval. A rare gem that I can hold onto whenever she says something passive aggressive in the future.

A knock sounds through the door of the guest room I'm in, pulling me out of my melancholy spiral.

"Who is it?" I wrap my robe further over me and tighten the belt.

"The best boyfriend ever." I laugh at the sound of Bennett's voice. Crossing the room, I open the door to him holding a large white box tied with a gold bow.

"I was going to tease you, but after lunch yesterday and seeing you here present today, I might have to agree." He grins and pecks my lips. I lace walking in the room.

"You can have a trophy made for me. *Best Boyfriend Award*. It would be great on my desk." The crisply made bed dents under the weight of the box when Bennett sets it down.

"I feel like great boyfriends don't talk about how great they are. Maybe I need to revoke your title..."

He grabs me by my waist and pulls me to his chest. The room spins as he captures my lips with his own. He shows me just how deserving I am of that trophy in this kiss. It's soft and tempting, and when he pulls away I am left wishing for more.

"How about now?" he whispers against my lips, his minty breath not saying against my skin.

"You can keep your title," I say and he gives me a smiling kiss. "I'm in love about this present..."

He laughs and steps back.

"Go ahead." His head dips in the direction of the box. I unravel the ribbon and slide off the top of the box. Under delicate tissue paper is a dress made up of the softest silk I've ever touched. It's simple, elegant, and still me.

"Ben," I whisper, looking over at him. "When did you get this?"

"I went to a boutique after you came back here to get ready. Grace gave me your measurements over the phone, so it should fit."

"Why?"

"Why did I get it? Because I saw the way you looked at that dress on your mom. You hate it. I know you'll be beautiful no matter what, but I think you deserve a dress that makes you feel as gorgeous as you are."

I pull the dress out of the box, the fabric rippling with every movement.

It's a stunning gown. If it wasn't such a faux pas to do so, I'd wear it more than once.

"I don't know if I can wear it." The dress pools like black honey around me as I lay it down on the bed.

"Why not?" Bennett's brows draw together. I can't bring myself to tell him, so I grab the note hidden in my purse and hand it to him.

is when His expression darkens as he reads, his jaw clenching.

he is of “This,” he grits out, holding up the note, “is nothing but li
/ay I’m manipulation.” He rips it in half. “Your father *loved* you, Sophie. I kn
were young when he passed, but I know love when I see it and he lov
1 warmso much. He wouldn’t have cared about what dress you wore. You
that.” He drops the note in the trashcan by the vanity.

“Now, Tears burn the backs of my eyes, threatening to ruin my elegant mal
“I do know that, but I also know what would make Mom happ
showed up in that pink dress I might be able to have a night wh
he golddoesn’t pick me apart.”

a black His hand takes mine, a sympathetic smile on his face. “That’s w
ant, but here for. I won’t let her bother you.”

“It’s more than that, though.” I sigh. “I want to please her, at least a
me does. If she could look at me and see someone worthy—”

gave me “No.” His voice is stern and low. “She doesn’t determine your wor
can’t let her have that power, Sophie. She’s not capable of handling it
reputation has shown.” He pulls me into a hug, my curlers hitt
ss from shoulder. “I know you, Soph. I know that you want a better relationsh
but you her, but this isn’t the way to go about that. You’re going to end up hu
end.”

vement. “You’re probably right.” In fact, I know he is. I just don’t know if I
it more accept what he’s saying. It would be easy to put on the pink gown and
her praise.

when I “You don’t have to wear the dress I got you tonight. I’ll ta
somewhere you can wear it another night if you’d like, because I’d lik
o lie to you in it.” He leans back and gives me a playful grin. “But it
decision.”

“Thank you,” I say quietly and he bends down to press a soft kiss
es and lips.

Now we “I love you. I’ll leave so you can get dressed.”

He shuts the door behind him, the lace dress billowing then lyi
I know against the door once more. I pull the dress from my mom down an

next to the black one. It shouldn’t be so hard to choose what I’m weari
ceup.

Bennett’s words from the past month roll through my mind like
y. If IVHS tape. He’s never forced anything on me, while my moth
ere she repeatedly done so my whole life. He truly wants me to be happy. I

foolish *not* to choose the dress he bought when I step back and thin
hat I’m he’s said and done.

I shrug off my robe, then slip into the silky black number. It hugs m
part of of the right places without being so tight that it’s uncomforta

inappropriate for the ball. There’s a small slit near the bottom for my s
th. You peek out. It’s perfect in every way, even more so because Bennett cho

, as her me. Not to make me conform to what he wanted, but so I would feel
ing his best self tonight.

Staring in the mirror, I know that any comments from my mother
it in the worth it. Because tonight I’m choosing myself.

want to

I accept



“Oh no,” I say as Bennett guides me into the large ballroom.

“What? What’s wrong?” He looks around the room.

“There’s a chocolate fountain,” I giggle and he scowls, but his e
’s your smiling.

“Very funny.”

s to my “I thought so.” I give him a cheeky smile and his hand on my waist to tickle me. I squeal and push him away, stumbling some in my heels. Ben keeps a hold of me. Drawing me close, he kisses me to quiet my laughing flat. “Come on lovebirds, don’t get carried away just yet. The night has already begun.” Bennett’s brother-in-law Daniel claps Ben on the shoulder with a smirk.

an old “Daniel, I love you, but I’m going to have to fight you if you ever interrupt us.” Bennett shoves him and he shoves back, both content to seem laughing the whole time. They start to wrestle while standing, each trying to get the upper hand. I step back to where Naomi is shaking her head at them.

“A child. I’m married to a child,” Naomi says, giving me a *what can you do* look. I snort and glance down at her hand rubbing her protruding belly. Her large diamond ring sparkling in the light.

Naomi says to me “In a few weeks you’ll have *two* kids.”

She laughs at my joke then lets out a content sigh. “He’s going to be like my great dad though.” She pauses, eyeing me for a moment. “So will Ben.”

“I agree.” I laugh as he messes up Daniel’s hair. Ben will make an amazing dad with his big heart and warm nature. It might be too soon to think about it but it’s true, it’s just in his character.

Naomi claps her hands together twice, making both the guys freeze in awkward holds of each other.

“You’re embarrassing us.” She has that ‘mom’ tone I’m sure she’s practicing for whenever she does have her baby, but she breaks and smiles. They untangle themselves and Daniel holds out a hand to me. Bennett shakes.

“So weird,” I say with a laugh.

“Not weird,” Daniel chastises me in a playful tone. “Manly

st startspractically grunts the world.

, but he “Whatever helps you sleep at night,” I tell him.

ter. Bennett throws an arm around my shoulders, pressing a kiss to the
; barelymy head. Naomi drags Daniel to the food tables.

with a “Are you proud to be dating a winner?” Ben asks, puffing his chest i

“I’m so proud of you for wrestling like a man child,” I coo and he p
u keepin again, peppering my neck with kisses. I giggle in his arms, half-he
of thempushing him away.

ying to “Sophie Amelia Cunningham.” My mother’s voice sends ice thro
them. veins. Bennett quickly pulls back, settling his arm around my wai
can youcomforting but appropriate manner.

g belly, My mother is wearing a pastel blue sheath dress that makes her lo
she’s about to prosecute me in court. Fitting, since she’s likely a
charge me guilty of too many offenses to count.

to be a “Hi, Mom.” I shift from foot to foot.

“Is this how you were raised to conduct yourself? If your fath
mazingalive—”

about it, Bennett cuts her off. “He’d be happy because his daughter is hap
certainly wouldn’t use her grief against her.”

in their “I’ve kept my mouth shut long enough around you for the sake
family, but I will not tolerate this disrespect any longer.” Panic rises l
’s beenin my throat at my mother’s retort. My mother not holding her tongu
ends upgood.

which “Disrespect?” Bennett lets out a bitter laugh. “You’re one to talk.
been disrespecting Sophie for years, tearing her down until she has
left.”

y.” He “I’ve given her everything. I raised her on my own and paid her

tuition. And she repays me by becoming a *cook* of all things.”

I press a hand to Bennett’s chest when he gears up to say more. “That’s enough.” I meet my mother’s piercing stare. “You have given me a lot, Mom, and I’m grateful for all of it. But that doesn’t mean you control me like a puppet.”

She scoffs. “If I were some evil puppet master would I let you control my life? Or try to introduce you to investors? I’ve helped you in spite of your choices, you’re just too spoiled to see that.”

Bennett’s fingers grip my waist tighter, but he keeps quiet.

“You had me make a deal with you, like we were business partners of mother and daughter.”

“How else would I have gotten you here? You are so stubborn! I know I want what’s best for you. That’s why I do what I do.”

“You’re wrong.” She rears back as if I’ve hit her. “I’ve experienced love. My voice cracks and I take in a shaky breath. “Love is sacrifice. It’s not self-seeking. You don’t know how to love me right now, and that’s why I need some time apart until things are different.” She presses a hand to her stomach, panic widening her eyes. My heart hurts, but I’m strong.

“What does that mean? You’re not going to see me anymore?” Her face hardens. “You can’t work my gala then and you won’t find investors.” I think of Sylvie and feel strengthened in my confidence.

“That’s okay, I have investors I’m meeting with.”

“You think they’ll trust you without my endorsement?”

“I wish you believed in me more, Mom.” Her face falls, imperceptible, but the crack in her armor gives me hope for the future. “I’ll do this on my own.”

“You’re going to regret this. You’ll come crawling back soon enough
need me.” She stumbles backward a few steps before turning and rushing
toward me in the ballroom.

Bennett pulls me into a hug, then cradles my face in his hands, looking
into my eyes.

“I am so proud of you, Soph.”

“Mush,” I whisper, tears in my eyes.

His lips meet mine in a kiss that fills me up until I overflow. He holds
me as if I’m fragile, but I know in my heart that he sees me as strong
and capable.

This is what love feels like.

I love you

I love.”

selfless,

is okay,

esses a

I stand

her face

and your

almost

. “I can

“You’re going to regret this. You’ll come crawling back soon enough. *You need me.*” She stumbles backward a few steps before turning and rushing out the ballroom.

Bennett pulls me into a hug, then cradles my face in his hands, looking into my eyes.

“I am so proud of you, Soph.”

“Mush,” I whisper, tears in my eyes.

His lips meet mine in a kiss that fills me up until I overflow. He holds me as if I’m fragile, but I know in my heart that he sees me as strong and capable.

This is what love feels like.

CHAPTER 23

CHAPTER 23

Bennett St. James

In the dictionary, under the word *torture*, should be the words: *going i after a weekend with Sophie*. I'm unfocused and distracted as I walk up office building. I have a surgery on an injured basketball player in days, and I'm glad I have those days to recover because if it was t don't know that I'd remember how to perform surgery.

All I can think about is Sophie. Her kiss, her smile, her laugh. It's a replay button in my brain was pushed and then got stuck, and I'm or to think of moments with her. This morning I was so engrossed memories I forgot to put coffee grounds in the coffee pot. I came back a carafe full of hot water.

Warm air hits my face as I walk through the building door. I nod to as I pass them, ready to get to my office and try to get my mind right. use the small coffee pot in there since I still haven't had any caffe morning.

My office door is unlocked when I approach, sending up red flags mind. There are a lot of important documents—medical and otherwise

in here. If someone broke in, they could have stolen information from several high-profile athletes. I take a deep breath and push open the door.

My face scrunches up when I see a large toy bathtub on my desk. Floating on top like some serial killer calling card is a purple rubber duck. So I walk closer to the desk only to find that the duck isn't floating on water, it's sitting on blue Jell-O. Inside of the Jell-O is my stapler, scissors, and a coffee cup. No idea how she managed to get into my office *and* carry it here on her own. I pull out my phone, laughing, and take a picture.

Bennett: Really? Jell-O?

Soph: I was watching *The Office* and inspiration struck.

to work A picture comes through of her looking too beautiful. There goes my hope to myof my day. Now I definitely won't be able to get her out of my head.

in a few **Soph: I'm meeting Sylvie in a few minutes. Wish me luck!**

today, I **Bennett: You don't need luck. You look beautiful, and you're all on your own. I can't wait to celebrate with you. Dinner tonight!**

is if the **Soph: I have to work, but dessert at your place after?**

ily able Memories of cinnamon sugar kisses and heated gazes come to mind as I lean in myon the collar of my polo shirt as the temperature rises in my office.

to find **Bennett: Sounds perfect.**

I set down my phone and assess the Jell-O monstrosity sitting on my desk. The best idea I have for getting to the bottom of the fake tub is to use a serving spoon. After another laugh at the prank, I walk down to the office thisroom hoping to find something that will make fishing out my office supplies easier.

s in my When I walk in, Sebastian is there watching the expensive espresso-machine fill his cup. Whenever it finishes, he presses a few buttons

aboutstarts the process over again. I've used the machine before, and I know. Each time it does at least a double shot of espresso.

"Rough night?" I ask him and start to search drawers for a large spoon. Sebastian looks at me, his eyes narrow.

"Maddie had a dance competition in Florida. We got back in late last night and myI drove three of her friends down to the beach so they wouldn't have to sit in the bus. A weekend with four preteens is not for the faint of heart. I survived on espresso and energy drinks."

His face is shadowed by the blue Thrashers ball cap he wears, but I can see the weariness still.

"Yikes, that does sound like a lot. How did she do?"

His grin breaks through his exhausted expression and he looks more like his usual laid-back self.

"Her group dance won second, and her solo won best overall." The way he says it, his voice is unmistakable. I smile and turn back to my work of searching for a spoon. Sebastian grabs his mug and takes a step away from the counter. I pull revealing another drawer. "Need something to dig with?" He smirks and his eyes narrow.

"I knew she would have had to have help. How did she even get into your desk with you?"

"My assistant told me a woman named Sophie called on behalf of James and I remembered her name from our conversation. I gave her the supplies back and helped her set up the prank."

"Can't trust anybody." I shake my head, but I'm smiling. The coffee spoon opens to reveal a few cooking utensils, among them a spoon. I grab it and shut the drawer.

"She sounded like a good one when we talked," Sebastian says

now that taking a drink from his mug. I stifle a shudder at the thought of espresso in a mug. “It’s nice to have someone who isn’t afraid to have enough I chuckle. “Sophie definitely isn’t afraid of that. She keeps me toes.”

at night. “That’s good. Don’t let her get away.”

to take “Oh, I won’t.” Images of engagement rings float through my brain. I’ve thought aren’t too fast for me, but I know Sophie may not be ready for yet. She’s given signs that she’s not opposed to getting married, but can see what the timeline looks like to her.

Standing in front of Sebastian, talking about Sophie, I remember conversation about her. He asked me if she was worth the risk. She would be like is. Now I have to evaluate if asking her to marry me early is worth it, to I think it just might be.

pride in

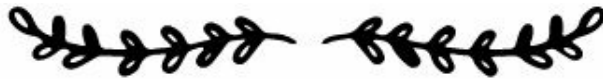
ing for a

counter,

and my It’s almost nine o’clock before my apartment door opens. Sophie texted earlier that she got the investment from Sylvie’s company, so I went in touch bought a cake to congratulate her from a local bakery after work and put it in the fridge. Sophie loves lemon cake, but I hate it. So I got lemon cake.

Dr. St. The sound of the door opening has me scrambling to my feet from the couch. Sophie breaks into a run down my hallway and jumps into my arms. She wraps her legs around me and my arms around her waist. Her soft laugh is next to my ear, filling me up with pure joy.

it then “I can’t believe I did it, Ben.” She pulls her head back, looking at me and holds me up. “I went in there and everyone was so kind. They treated me like a true business owner, and they listened to my pitch like they cared. S



straightson, Dalton, told me that he was impressed and could see Farm-To fun.” becoming a *nationwide phenomenon*. Can you believe that?”

on my “Of course I can believe it, Soph. You’re an amazing chef and worked so hard for this.”

She smashes her lips against mine with a force that snatches my . Theseaway. Her fingers rake through my hair as the kiss deepens. I walk he or themkitchen and set her on the counter without breaking apart. She holds r I don’tin her hands, but she really holds my heart.

“I love you,” she whispers after she pulls away.

our first “I love you more,” I say and she pulls me in again, mumbling *mu* vas andour kiss. We can barely kiss because we’re both smiling so much. oo. gives up, her forehead falling to my shoulder as she laughs.

“Is this real? I keep feeling like I’m going to wake up and it’s all g be a dream.” Her words tug at the strings of my heart, unraveling m seams.

“I feel the same way. How did I get the most beautiful girl in the w rted mebe my girlfriend?” I ask and she lifts her head, her cheeks rosy.

out and “Is it your life’s goal to turn me into a puddle?”

put it in I grin and start to kiss down the slope of her jaw until I get to her e a worthwhile pursuit, don’t you think?”

where I I kiss behind her ear, fire burning deep within me when she sighs, l ralleytouch on the back of my neck like gasoline on an open flame. The ten grip herfor more is heavy in the air and I have to push away from Sophie, s

backward until my back hits the cabinet opposite of her. She bites her me as I white knuckle the marble countertop. *Slow down*, I remind myself me likeworth the wait.

ylvie’s “Dessert?” she asks, kicking her legs with a look that is far from i,

o-Truckof the tension between us. I almost tell her she's sweet enough for
that wouldn't do well to quell my desire.

you've "It's in the fridge." My voice is raspy and low. She smirks when I
clear my throat. This woman is going to be the death of me.

breath I go to the fridge to cool off and grab the cake. It's frosted in white
with lavender and yellow decorations piped on top around the
my face*Congratulations, Sophie.* I set it beside her and she hops down
counter, a smile playing on her lips.

"I love it, thank you Ben. This is so sweet, pun intended."

ish into I laugh and grab a knife and fork out of the drawer beside me. She
Sophieplates from the cabinet behind us and my heart squeezes at how don
feels. She knows this place like it's her own already. It never occurred
going tohow easy this could be between us. My only regret is not trying sooner
e at thestanding still long enough to see that I needed someone—needed *her*.

I cut a slice and place it on one of the plates, setting down the knife
world to "You aren't going to have any?" She frowns and I hand her a fork.

"Take a bite."

She eyes me warily.

ar. "It's "Listen, you can't poison me for breaking into your office. It was
prank and you know it!"

her soft I laugh at her crazy assumptions. "I didn't *poison* it. You have
mptationwatching those late night investigation shows. Just take a bite."

tepping Eventually, she picks up the fork and takes a miniscule bite of the
lip andHer eyes light up. "Lemon! You're the best."

. She's "It's really to keep me from kissing you too much. That stuff is nasty."

She rolls her eyes and takes another bite, this one bigger. "It's deli
gnorantshe says around a mouthful. A high-pitched ping rings through the ap.

me, but and she reaches into her pocket, pulling out her phone and setting down the cake.

have to Her face falls, some of the color draining out.

“It’s Michael,” she says, shock lining her tone. Her phone screen is a pale, icy white with one singular gray message at the bottom when she flips it to the front.

off the **Michael: Can we talk?**

A heavy weight settles in my stomach. Another message comes in. I stare at it.

she grabs **Michael: Please.**

restic it Sophie turns the screen back, her lips downturned.

d to me “What should I say?”

ner, not *Tell him he can take his apology and get lost. That he doesn’t deserve a minute—one second of your time.*

after. “What do you want to do?”

She bites her thumbnail, staring at the screen. The weight inside me grows heavier and heavier. “I don’t know. I can at least text him back. Would that be okay?”

a funny “Only if it’s what you really want. You don’t owe him anything.”

She nods slowly, eyes glued on the screen. “I’ll text him back.”

to quit “Okay, if that’s what you want to do.”

My heart has decided that my throat is a better place to live now. I type out her message for an agonizing amount of time—probably a minute, in reality—then shows it to me.

y.” **Sophie: What do you want to talk about?**

icious,” Michael replies immediately. My stomach burns at the thought of the department waiting for her to text back. *Expecting* her to text back.

own her **Michael: I want to apologize, get some things off my chest.**

Sophie looks to me, uncertainty in her eyes. “I guess it might be nice to have some closure. A phone call couldn’t hurt.”

s bright “You can always hang up and block him when he says something id

o show She smiles and shakes her head at me, no doubt recognizing my

when instead of *if*. Her shoulder touches mine as she positions herself :

watch her type. I appreciate her openness. We’ve never hidden phone

1 below each other, but it’s nice to know that doesn’t stop now that we’re toget

Sophie: I can give you a call.

Another instant reply. This one makes my blood run cold.

Michael: I’d rather talk in person. This kind of thing should be done over the phone.

rive one Sophie starts to reply right away, and I hold my breath until I see her refusing him.

Sophie: I don’t think that’s a good idea.

ne gets A typing bubble appears. I really wish this guy was less persistent. I would that never cared about Sophie while they were together, why now?

Michael: I really want to apologize in person. We were together for a long time. I feel bad about what happened. It deserves more than a phone call.

Sophie doesn’t reply instantly this time. She looks up at me instead.

Sophie “You’re thinking of going,” I say, knowing her too well to waste a minute asking. Michael knows what buttons to push, and it’s working. I could change Sophie’s mind, but would that make me any better than him?

“I think I might go meet him. The worst that happens is I waste time with him because he’s the same jerk he was last year.”

Highly likely.

I must not be hiding my emotions as well as I was trying to, I could be Sophie meets my eyes and gives me a sympathetic smile.

“Hey.” She reaches up and cups my cheek. “You don’t have anything to worry about. This is just to see if I can get some answers to the questions I’ve use of have been in my head. Do you want to come? Sit somewhere nearby and so I can be behind a newspaper?” Her tone is light, but I know she means what she says from saying and that brings me some comfort.

her. I’m not an insecure man, and I trust Sophie. But it’s hard not to worry at least a little bit about how this could go wrong. He manipulated her in the past, and he could do it again. More than anything, I’m worried that I **in’t be** will hurt her and I’ll end up in jail and lose my medical practice. He did before I could do anything the last time he insulted her.

she’s “I trust you. Just know I’m a phone call away.”

Sophie wraps her arms around my waist and I return her embrace. She kisses my chest over my shirt and rubs my back. “I love you.” I release a breath. I know I need to trust her and let her make her own decisions. Everything will be okay. “I love you, too.”

r for a She kisses me and I find I like the taste of lemon cake a whole lot more **than a** when it’s on her lips.

te time

d try to

ny time

I must not be hiding my emotions as well as I was trying to, because Sophie meets my eyes and gives me a sympathetic smile.

“Hey.” She reaches up and cups my cheek. “You don’t have anything to worry about. This is just to see if I can get some answers to the questions that have been in my head. Do you want to come? Sit somewhere nearby and hide behind a newspaper?” Her tone is light, but I know she means what she’s saying and that brings me some comfort.

I’m not an insecure man, and I trust Sophie. But it’s hard not to worry at least a little bit about how this could go wrong. He manipulated her in the past, and he could do it again. More than anything, I’m worried that Michael will hurt her and I’ll end up in jail and lose my medical practice. He ran off before I could do anything the last time he insulted her.

“I trust you. Just know I’m a phone call away.”

Sophie wraps her arms around my waist and I return her embrace. She kisses my chest over my shirt and rubs my back. “I love you.”

I release a breath. I know I need to trust her and let her make her own decisions. Everything will be okay. “I love you, too.”

She kisses me and I find I like the taste of lemon cake a whole lot more when it’s on her lips.

CHAPTER 24

CHAPTER 24

Sophie Cunningham

“What do you wear to meet your ex-boyfriend?” I ask as I flip through clothes in my closet.

“I don’t know, I would never willingly meet one of mine,” MJ replies where she’s watering the plants in my windowsill. She put plants in all rooms for the sake of air purification, but I always forget to take care of them. After the third plant death, she took over caring for mine.

“Yes, well, I *am*, so I need help.” I huff and pull out a pair of faux leggings, purse my lips, then put them back. “I don’t want to look like I’m trying too hard, but I also don’t want to look so bad that I don’t feel confident.”

“This is not my area of expertise. I dress for myself, always.” She looks at an aloe vera plant. “My advice would be to care less. If you want my advice, call Lottie.”

“You’ve never dressed a certain way for a date? Never cared what anyone thought of your outfit?” I stop my closet raid and stare at her.

“Not that I can recall. Maybe in high school?” She shrugs. “Seems like a waste of time.”

“I wish I had your confidence,” I say and pull out my phone.

“It doesn’t have anything to do with confidence. I just don’t care enough to please someone else.”

I study her nonchalant expression for a moment and find no cracks. She continues spritzing plants as if she didn’t just admit she’s never loved what her past boyfriends—or anyone else for that matter—think of her. I get not putting too much stock into it, especially an ex, but to not care? No nervous first date jitters wondering if he’ll like what you did with your hair? What’s a date without hoping he compliments the outfit you spent hours vetting with your best friends?

Shrugging it off, I video call Lottie. Hopefully I don’t disturb her

Callum’s evening too much or interrupt any *newlywed activities*. The camera focuses from rings a few times before Lottie’s golden curls and bright blue eyes come into view.

“Sophieeee!” Her greeting lifts some of the anxiety of meeting her

Lottie has this uncanny ability to make you feel as if you’re the most important person in the room and that she truly cares about what you’re going to say. She can be sassy—as her husband will attest—but she’s also got a heart made of pure sugar and gold.

“Hey, Lottie, I need fashion advice.” Her eyes light up and her grin spreads in a wide grin.

“Are you going on a date with Bennington? Do you think he’s going to propose? If he’s proposing, wear a low heel so your legs look long and sexy. Don’t get overexcited and trip.”

I laugh at her giddy nature combined with her use of Bennington as a favorite nickname.

“It’s not for a date, and I don’t think Bennett is going to propose at

soon.” Lottie looks like she doesn’t believe me. If Ben proposed, it would be a no-brainer, but I would say yes. We’ve known each other for twenty years like I know him better than myself at times.

“So what is it for? Do you have another TV interview?”

I bite the inside of my cheek and MJ gives me a look. When I called her, she looked surprised. I forgot that I’d have to tell her what I need the outfit for. She’s a professional and loyal friend. I doubt this will go over well.

“Um-so don’t freak out, okay?” She raises a brow. “I’m meeting Michael.”

In an instant, her sunny demeanor darkens. “Why on earth would you get involved with that jerk?”

“He wants to apologize.” I toy with the hem of a dress hanging in my closet, avoiding eye contact.

“I’m sure that’s all he wants. Not to manipulate you or treat you poorly.” Michael. She sighs and I frown. “Where are you meeting at?”

“We’re getting coffee at The Sweet Bean tomorrow morning.”

“Is Ben going?”

“I told him he could, but he said he trusts me to go alone.”

“Well, I trust you, but I don’t trust Michael. I’m going to go with my bodyguard in a corner and if he says anything wrong, I’ll dump my coffee on his head.” She pauses, MJ filling in the gap with a rare full laugh. I glare at her, only making her laugh more. “On second thought, he’s not worth my coffee, so I’ll get a cup of ice water or—oh! Something extra strong lemonade.”

I groan and pinch the bridge of my nose.

“Lottie, that’s not necessary. I just needed help with an outfit for my timebodyguard.”

ould be “Too bad, you’re getting both! Wear leggings and one of those ov
s. I feelband tees you love. But do your makeup up and leave your hair down
of done up and dressed down. What time are you meeting him?”

I sigh, resigned to my fate. “Seven.”

d Lottie “I’ll see you then.”

etective —

It’s pouring down rain when I get out of my pickup in front of The
up withBean. A spot of pink pops up a few cars down. Lottie brightens the
gray city in her pink pantsuit, holding an umbrella decorated with pol
ou meetand frills. Leave it to Lottie to show up to a covert mission looking
curly haired Barbie doll.

in my “Hey!” She grins from under her umbrella when she makes it to me
here yet?” Her blue eyes dart around the parking lot, as if Michael is g
oorly.”pop up horror movie style any second.

“I don’t see him or his car. We should go inside before he spots
look her over and she rolls her eyes.

“I have work after this, Sophie. I can’t very well show up in black.
will think someone died.” I snort and walk into The Sweet Bean behi
you andboth of us dropping our wet umbrellas in the bin by the door.

on his “Just don’t make a scene, please.”

at her, “I won’t if he doesn’t.”

wasting She steps up to the counter and orders the largest salted caram
ky likecoffee they offer... and a pink lemonade. I order a chai latte after I
bothering to wait on Michael. It’s not like I’d let him pay for me anyw

After a good luck hug, Lottie situates herself in a back corner while
, not a small table at the front of the shop, hoping to lower the likelihood o:

oversized being spotted. It's probably not a huge deal if he sees her, but I don't want to be. A mix of relief and embarrassment to feel ambushed and it ruin things if he actually is trying to be nice.

Michael walks in three minutes past our meeting time, dropping his umbrella in the bin by the door. His ever-present smirk occupies his face, but it's not setting my nerves off. He doesn't look repentant in the slightest, but his face is just stuck like that from years of schooling it into that expression. Sweet. He spots me and immediately comes to sit down, not bothering to order anything. Throwing his blazer over the back of the chair, he sits down and sets his dark eyes on me.

“You look pretty today. Is all that makeup for me?”

My stomach sours. “You're not the only person I have to see today, Michael.” I set my face in a scowl, crossing my arms. So far, this isn't looking like a good apology meeting.

“Oh don't look at me like that, babe. I was just kidding.”

“I'm not your babe.”

His expression darkens at my retort, but he tries to cover it with a smile. “That's sort of what I'm here about. I miss you.” He reaches across the table and places his palm up like he expects me to place my hand in his. I almost laugh. Did I agree to this? I should have known better, or at least listened to my friends. This is what I get for trying to figure out if he really meant what he said that day we broke up.

“The feeling is not mutual. I thought you wanted to apologize to me, not grant me a tight smile and the retreat of his hand.”

“I was getting to that. I'm sorry you were hurt by what I said at the wedding.”

He's sorry *I* was hurt, not sorry for what *he* said. The man must be quite adept in the area of apologizing.

It's not really an apology, Michael." Lottie's presence in the shop is comforting, but when Michael's jaw clenches I'm wish I would have brought Ben. I take a sip of my chai, letting the warmth soothe my nerves.

"What do you want me to say, Sophie? I said I was sorry and I was back. We can go to your mom's gala together." The fact that he's standing with enough to know about my mother's gala is unsettling.

"I want an apology that's a step up from what a third grader could give. And I'm in a relationship, so I'm not interested in reconnecting." That's the wrong thing to say, based on the fire that explodes in his eyes.

"I've seen your Instagram posts with Bennett. I thought they were like an attempt to make me jealous. You can't seriously be dating him."

My own anger roars to life. "I have no desire to make you jealous. If I *are* dating. Not only that, we're in love." I should have stopped this rant a long time ago. When he came in with the smirk, I should have given a grin. Lottie and I left. The anger radiating off him has a dangerous edge to it. I sit at the table, me shifting in my chair.

"I knew you two were sneaking around behind my back!" He growls. My mouth drops.

"That's not true in the slightest. I am *not* a cheater. We got together and you and I broke up." I stand up, slinging my bag over my shoulder. "I'm snatching up my chai. "I'm done here. Your apology is *not* accepted."

I go to walk away, but his hand shoots out and grips my wrist. His fingers dig in, sending dull pain up my arm.

"We're not done here."

I jerk my wrist to no avail. He's much stronger. Panic rises like a fire within me.

back of “Let me go!” Other patrons turn to look at us. I’m attempting to
shing Islimy hand off my wrist when suddenly he’s cursing and falling ba
i spicesout of his chair. His head is soaked, and he’s wiping aggressively at hi

I whip my head to the side and see Lottie, an empty lemona
ant youbrandished like a weapon in front of her.

ked me “Next time, keep your hands to yourself,” Lottie says before link
arm with mine. “If you try anything with her ever again, you’ll regret i
ld give. She walks me over to the barista—who’s failing to hide her laugh
his wasstuffs a large tip into the jar on the counter.

“For the mess,” she explains, but the barista waves her off. Lottie
just toher a signature pageant queen smile before turning and leading me tow
door. We get our umbrellas, but thankfully the rain has dissipated.

Ben and My heart is still pounding when we walk out onto the wet sidewalk.
neeting “Are you okay?” The bite in her voice now gone, Lottie is sweet as
grabbedpulling me into a soft hug and rubbing my back.

that has “I think so. I should have listened to y’all. I didn’t think he would d
“That makes two of us. I thought he’d be a jerk, but not forcefu
wls andpulls away. “Bennett is going to freak.”

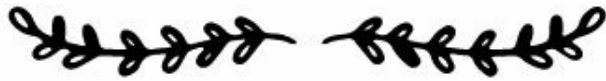
A different kind of anxiety leaps into my throat. He hated the idea
er aftergoing. I’m going to have to lock him in a room to keep him from tr
ler andfind Michael. Bennett has always been a sweet, golden retriever type
but he’s also made it clear he’ll hurt anyone who hurts me.

fingers “Maybe he’ll take it better than we think.”

Lottie looks as convinced as I feel. “Sure, just ... hide his car keys
you tell him.”

e a tide

pry his
ckward



s eyes. “He *grabbed* you?” Bennett’s low, growly tone has me grateful that
de cup and locked his office door behind me when I came in.

“Ben, it’s no big deal. I’m not hurt, and Lottie was there to help me.
ing her Bennett stares at me, his arms crossed as he sits on the edge of his
t.” His dress shirt is tight over his defined chest. He looks *hot*, but I don’t
ter—and he’d welcome my girlish compliment right now, all things considered.

“What if she wouldn’t have been?”

shoots “It doesn’t matter, because she was there.” He looks far from satis-
ward the my avoidance of his question.

“Where does he work again? Some pretentious real estate company,
right?” He walks around his desk and grabs his keys, shoving them
candy, pocket. “What was the name?”

“Ben, you’re not going to go to his work. That’s crazy.” I lean against
o *that*.” office door, though I know if he wanted to get past me he’d be able to
l.” She me easily. He stalks back around the desk.

“What’s *crazy* is that he had the audacity to *touch* you and think that
a of me was going to happen to him. Even crazier is that you’re trying to stop
ying to from going.” The bite in his tone is unmistakable. I hate that I went
of guy, Michael. All of this could have been avoided if I’d just blocked his number
would have, if I’d expected he’d be in touch again. I didn’t even think
it.

before “Are you going to be mad at me over something he did?”

His eyes soften, his arms dropping down to his sides. “I’m not mad
I’m upset that I wasn’t there to protect you.”

I push off the door and stand in front of him. His arms snake around my waist. I realize that I've never felt this safe with anyone else. My heart is shut tight, but I'm rubbed raw from seeing Michael. It's hard to believe I ever thought I could love with him. Looking back, it's clear that he was awful to me the whole time we were together. I hate feeling stupid, feeling blinded, but I don't want to dwell on that. Especially not now that I have someone so clearly good in my life. I don't think I'll ever be the same without *Ben*.

"I'm okay." I lay my hands on his chest. "It's all over now."

Bennett sighs and presses a kiss to my forehead. "All I want is for you to be safe. I don't know what I'd do if something happened to you."

There goes my heart, it's melted into a puddle along with all the bones in my body. It's a good thing he's holding me up right now, or else I'd be on the ground.

"I love you. I don't deserve you."

"I love you. You deserve everything I have and more."

We kiss, and it tastes like forever.

nothing

stop me

from seeing

you. I

don't want to

forget you.

I push off the door and stand in front of him. His arms snake around my waist. I realize that I've never felt this safe with anyone else. My heart is rubbed raw from seeing Michael. It's hard to believe I ever thought I was in love with him. Looking back, it's clear that he was awful to me the whole time we were together. I hate feeling stupid, feeling blinded, but I don't want to dwell on that. Especially not now that I have someone so clearly good—*my Ben*.

“I'm okay.” I lay my hands on his chest. “It's all over now.”

Bennett sighs and presses a kiss to my forehead. “All I want is for you to be safe. I don't know what I'd do if something happened to you.”

There goes my heart, it's melted into a puddle along with all the bones in my body. It's a good thing he's holding me up right now, or else I'd surely be on the ground.

“I love you. I don't deserve you.”

“I love you. You deserve everything I have and more.”

We kiss, and it tastes like forever.

CHAPTER 25

CHAPTER 25

Sophie Cunningham

“Could you kill someone with essential oils?” I pick up an amber glass off of MJ’s large wooden stand. The little white label reads *Raven* beautiful cursive. MJ has been into essential oils for a few years now while I’m not going to buy my own apothecary any time soon, I do they work. Her *Cold Be Gone* blend always helps open my sinuses when I’m sick.

“No.” MJ answers me from where she’s drawing in one of her sketchbooks. I came to bother—I mean *talk* to her while we wait on everyone to arrive for our get together. All the couples will be here tonight, including Brad and Zara, an adorable couple from Lottie’s work. There’s a charcuterie board on the kitchen island ready to be devoured, and the fridge is stocked with drinks as well as cookie dough for dessert later. All that we do is wait. And pester MJ.

“Aren’t some of them poisonous though? Like if you ingest certain ones couldn’t you die?”

“You could get sick, but you’d have to consume a lot to die.” She looks up from her sketchbook. “Am I going to be implicated whenever you

arrested for murder later?”

I laugh and flop onto the end of her bed. “No, I was just listening to a true crime podcast where they were discussing unlikely weapons and they had an essential oils ad right in the middle of the podcast. So, naturally, I was curious if the *oils* could be a weapon.”

“Naturally,” MJ says drily.

“What are you drawing?” I ask, rolling over onto my side to look at her.

She flips her sketchbook around to show a large sunflower in shades of gray. It looks as if there’s a soft breeze moving the petals. MJ tends to focus on nature in her art. On the walls around us are paintings of the ocean, a bottleour backyard in spring. It’s rare that she does portraits, though I have seen *sara* and her do some on occasion.

“It’s beautiful,” I tell her, though I know the compliment is overused. I believe it comes to anything she does.

“Thank you. I had a dream last night that I was walking through a field of sunflowers in my mother’s garden.” A sympathetic smile forms on her face. It’s rare for her to reveal her emotions, but since we have the shared experience of losing a parent, she sometimes will pull back the curtain on her mind for a brief moment.

“Your mom grew sunflowers?”

A soft smile pulls at her mouth, her attention back on the sketch.

“Yes, every year there would be this large patch of tall sunflowers in our backyard. I’d go out there and lay in the middle of them, staring up at the ones, blooms and the bits of sky breaking through. Most moms would probably hate the idea of their daughter laying down in the dirt every day, but it works up mine. When I got older, I was smart enough to bring a towel so I didn’t get you get

bits of leaves and soil in my hair, but for a few years she helped p
to thisthose leaves and wash my hair.”

nd then “She sounds like a good mom.”

rally, I “She was.” MJ shuts her sketchbook, laying it aside before sliding
bed. “People should be getting here soon. I’m going to freshen up.”

Annd there goes our moment. At least I got to hear a little bit bef
her. ducked back in her turtle shell again. I don’t fault her for it, but it’s h
ades ofto want more from one of my closest friends.

o focus “Okay, thanks for letting me invade your space for a little while.”

, forest, She shrugs as if she wasn’t bothered by it at all. “I would have kick
ve seenout if I felt like you were invading.”

“That’s a comfort, I suppose.”

d when Her lips twitch as if she might smile again, but she doesn’t break. Sl
and walks away but pauses in the doorway.

igh the Without looking back, she quietly says, “Thank you for listening
ny lips.story about my mom.” Then she leaves the room.

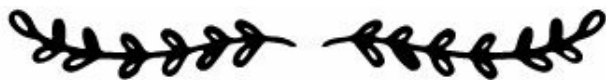
grief of Her soft-spoken gratitude reminds me that sharing to her look
id for adifferent than it does to me. I’ll still keep hoping for someone to cr
fortress, but I can be happy that she chose me to share something so p
with in the first place.

s in our

o at the

robably “Sunset doesn’t count! They’re not exclusively orange,” Wyatt sa
but not Lottie glowers at him from across the room.

dn’t get “It didn’t say name three *exclusively* orange things, it just said nar
things that are orange. Sunsets can be orange! I get the point.”



ick out We're playing Five Second Rule, a game where you have a time limit for each card has you name things in a category with only five seconds to think. The teams are boys versus girls, except Grace sat out to make it even. I'm beginning to think that she actually sat out to avoid drama.

ore she Bennett shoots me an amused look from where he's sitting with the other two. We're both somewhat competitive, but Lottie and Wyatt grew up competing, and Callum has an intense competitive streak as well. They take each game seriously, no matter what it is. Brad and Zara are more childlike. You've spent most of the game staring at Zara with so much sugary affection that it makes my teeth hurt.

"Callum, tell your *wife* sunset doesn't count," Wyatt looks at me and turns exasperated.

Callum pauses, and for a moment I wonder which will win: his affection for Lottie, or his desire to win.

He smirks. "Sunset doesn't count, beautiful. No point."

If glares could set things on fire, we'd be in a burning room. Grace cracks her head down over the notebook she's keeping score in. Zara covers her face with a smile. Bennett and I try to control our laughter. All the while Lottie and Callum are in a silent standoff. Wyatt is forgotten at this point, flopping back on the couch with a huff.

Callum keeps his lazy smirk and Lottie tries to hold her glare.

"You're cute when you're angry, Mrs. Sterling." Callum's words are aimed at Lottie's resolve. She rolls her eyes, but a warm pink blush rises up her cheeks.

Brad shakes his head, like he's seen this a thousand times. He probably is, considering they all work closely together.

"We're so fighting as soon as we leave here," she says, and a

mit and escapes me.

o do it. “I’m looking forward to it.” Callum winks.

ven and “Oh get a room.” Wyatt shoves Callum’s shoulder. “That’s my *sister* and she’s got the shudders and we all laugh, even MJ. I swear I hear Callum mutter *my wife*, but I can’t be sure.

the guys. “Speaking of rooms,” Bennett says. “How are the renovations always along, Wyatt?”

they take Wyatt smiles, looking over to Grace. “It’s going great! Grace handles the kitchen; Bradstocking the library, while I do all the work.”

reaction it Grace scoffs and throws a couch pillow at him, which he just catches with a boyish grin.

o him, “I’m *kidding*, Angel.” He winks at her then turns his attention back to the guys. “She’s been helping a lot. We should have the majority of it done by June. I’ll be out–his the wedding.”

Grace is moving a few hours from Atlanta to live with Wyatt in his hometown, Sweet Oak, after they get married. He bought an old Victorian house to renovate, building a library for Grace before she even agrees to move back together with him. She’s finishing out the school year here in Atlanta and then transferring to teach in Sweet Oak. My heart drops a little thing back how we won’t be living together in a few months, but I know she’s going to be happier there. She’s not a city girl at heart.

“I can’t believe you’re getting married in a few months!” Lottie says and hugs Grace.

er neck. “Just last year you were telling us not so much as a fraction of your feelings for Wyatt,” I tease. “Now look at you, planning a wedding and renovating a house.”

a laugh “Says the girl who didn’t even make it two months before break

man ban,” Grace teases right back and Bennett smirks at me.

“She couldn’t resist my charms,” Ben says and I roll my eyes.
er.” He unfortunately right. It was impossible to resist him.

and my “How humble of you,” I say and he gives me a cheesy grin. I take
my chai latte that MJ made me. She makes the best oat milk chai latte
comingshe made one special for me since I made her cookies that fit
restrictions.

as been “So, when are you two getting married?” Wyatt asks and my chest
down the wrong way. I cough into the sleeve of Ben’s sweatshirt. Zara
ies with my back and I avoid Bennett’s eyes. I don’t know what I want to see
expression. If he’s too casual it might hurt, and if he’s too serious it
to Ben.scare me. I feel ready for more, but we also haven’t been dating that long
une for “Wyatt, it’s a little early to be asking that,” Grace speaks up, an apologetic
look on her face.

in their “They grew up together, it’s not like they just met a month ago.”
victorianshrugs. “I say, why wait? I’d have married you already if you didn’t
d to getfinish out the school year.”

Atlanta, Grace smiles and shakes her head at him.

king of My curiosity wins the battle against my desire to protect my heart
going to chance looking at Ben. He’s looking right at me, really right *through* me.
man knows me too well, and when he gives me a sweet smile, I know
squeals meant to comfort me. Like a warm chocolate chip cookie, that smile hits
up from the inside out until all my worries drift away. Whatever he says
you has doesn’t matter, because his answer is for Wyatt, not for me.

ng and “I can’t say, it would ruin the surprise.” He winks at me and I grin.

“What about Brad and Zara? They’ve been together a few months
ing herLottie turns the attention on the last couple without a ring in the room

got together over a road trip last Thanksgiving and have been inseparable since. He's never since.

"We're taking it slow," Zara answers, uncertainty making her voice a sip of than usual. Judging by the red face Brad is now sporting, it may not be as slow as she thinks. If I had to bet—and I just might with Lottie later—he's got all herring already.

"Are we still playing the game or what?" Bennett asks, sitting up from his seat. Brad mouths *thank you* to him and Ben nods in acknowledgment. Zara pats the game kicks back off, but I can't keep my eyes from wandering in his Bennett. Our gazes catch almost every time, sending butterflies into flight in my stomach. I even miss an easy category because he smiles at me meaningfully. The world tips. I love him so much. Like salt on a dish, he makes everything a little better.

' Wyatt

have to

t, and I

ne. The

ow it's

eats me

ys next

s now."

n. They

got together over a road trip last Thanksgiving and have been inseparable ever since.

“We’re taking it slow,” Zara answers, uncertainty making her voice higher than usual. Judging by the red face Brad is now sporting, it may not be as slow as she thinks. If I had to bet—and I just might with Lottie later—he’s got a ring already.

“Are we still playing the game or what?” Bennett asks, sitting up further in his seat. Brad mouths *thank you* to him and Ben nods in acknowledgment.

The game kicks back off, but I can’t keep my eyes from wandering to Bennett. Our gazes catch almost every time, sending butterflies into flight in my stomach. I even miss an easy category because he smiles at me and my world tips. I love him so much. Like salt on a dish, he makes everything better.

CHAPTER 26

CHAPTER 26

Bennett St. James

May, Three months later

I'm proposing to my best friend tonight. Breathing has become a thing of the past, a fond memory I can look back on and say *remember when I knew how to fill your lungs completely? Wasn't that nice?* I had hoped working today would keep my brain occupied enough to keep me from stressing out, but that is far from the case.

This morning I had a few post-op check-ups which helped distract me. As soon as those were over, I was back to second-guessing every choice I made down to the ring burning a hole in my nightstand. I *know* Sophie should be no wondering if I got the right ring, or if she'll like the proposal I propose. But my brain isn't operating on logic right now, so no matter how much I try to reassure myself, I fail.

Lunch comes and goes, and after pacing in my office like a caged animal, I grab my lanyard and then head toward the practice field. Spring training practice has been underway since March, and I've gone a few times to

the players. The Thrashers' indoor practice field is no joke. A full football field housed in an air-conditioned facility.

It's massive from the outside, looming overhead as I walk up. I scan and listen for the buzz that indicates I'm allowed in. The large metal door is heavy against my palm as I push my way inside. The cool air washes over me along with a cacophony of coaches' instructions and players' responses.

All of the players are grouped by position for these practices, focusing on learning techniques and plays. Each group has its own coach, and although Sebastian is the head coach, he likes to help out the DBs—defensive backs—since he played as a safety in college and the NFL. Sure enough, I find myself standing with a group of DBs and their coach whenever I walk up.

“Keep your hips open, you can't point inside,” Sebastian says, turning his hips out to demonstrate the move. “That will help you cover the receiver better when they go for a deep pass.” He spots me during his explanation and smiles under his white ballcap with the brown Thrasher bird logo.

“You take it from here, coach.” Sebastian slaps the DB coach on the shoulder then tips his head in a direction away from the players. I follow him, but he goes over to the sidelines where he grabs a bottled sports drink and chugs a choice of it.

“The team is looking good, Bash,” I say and he grins, wiping his face with the bottom of his shirt.

“Thanks, man, I think so too, but don't tell 'em I said so.” He wrinkles his nose and laughs. Sebastian is known for his focus on humility and technique as a coach. He doesn't tear his players down, but he also makes sure they know their place and don't get big heads from the press or past wins.

“Think you'll secure another ring this season?”

“I hope so, I really do.” He side-eyes me. “Speaking of rings ...”

l-length I groan and rake a hand through my hair. “I came here to get my m
of proposing.”

my ID Sebastian lifts his hands in a surrender motion. “You’re the one wh
door is into my office all panicked earlier this week. I wouldn’t have asked
over me would have kept it a secret.”

s. “I wasn’t *panicked*, just concerned.” I was so panicked, and very mu
sing on am.

id even “Mhmm, sure,” he says, eyes on the field. “You look about as calm
fensivewhen Maddie told me about her first crush.”

gh, he’s “So you were calm, cool, and collected?”

“I almost ran the car off the road.”

ing his “Cool.”

receiver He laughs and throws an arm around my shoulder, giving me
mation, squeeze. “You’re going to be fine. The girl is in love with you, sh
going to say no. And if you’re worrying about being perfect, that’s i
on thebecause no one can be.”

ow him Another coach calls out for him across the field.

quarter “Let me know when she says yes. You’re going to be fine!” With o
grin, he jogs off in the direction of the offensive line coach.

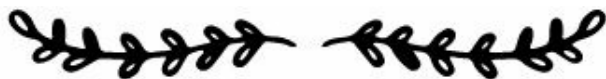
mouth I take a deep breath and try to let his words sink in.

Everything is going to be okay.

lks and

ie as a

y know



Everything is not okay. In fact, everything is falling apart. Sophie
scavenger hunt right now. I left one of those glitter bomb boxes in her
truck with the first clue inside. I had to prank her. It was only right a

mind off the pranks she's gotten away with this year. The clue has instructions for the next location, a love letter from me, and a bonus note to text her best friend to come to a group chat to have them all alerted to be helping her—as well as keep me updated on her progress.

It was all going according to plan until she got to Sylvie's house, which still our first kiss was as well as the final clue to lead her to my apartment.

The clue wasn't on the metal bench when she got there. It must have been as I felt away or gotten picked up by a maintenance worker. So I had to have to tell her the next clue to lead her here. So she's finally on her way, but her pickup truck broke down a few miles away. Now, Callum is handling the truck being towed while Lottie drives her the rest of the trip.

All of this isn't so bad if it wasn't for the cake. The beautiful lemon cake that we're supposed to eat to celebrate with all of our friends after work is not right. It's supposed to have our names on it, with Sophie's favorite flowers on top, useless, over the top. It was delivered just moments ago all wrong. *This* cake is a triple chocolate cake, that reads *Happy 3rd Birthday Jackson*, with frosting and truck pouring Oreo dirt on top. I have no time to go get a different one. So now my scavenger hunt has failed, Sophie's truck broke down, and the cake isn't even close to right. All of our friends are messaging me in a panic, but it's hard not to when all of my plans have been set on fire.

The lock on my door clicks and I push the button on the remote that connects to my Bluetooth speaker. I'm standing in the middle of a room with a heart, and our favorite songs are going to be playing. Except what comes on is *not* our favorite songs. No, it's my *workout playlist*. Loud, intense music pulses through the speakers. Some rapper is yelling about being the pickup everything. I fumble with the remote, but the music doesn't change. I turn off the speaker in the kitchen.

for the “Ben?” Sophie’s voice rings out as I’m trying to turn off the speaker. I hear her again. “Ben, is everything okay?”

I spin on my heel. Sophie is standing in my kitchen archway, glitter black skinny jeans, eyes rimmed in red, but wearing a smile as bright as a shooting star.

Except I run a hand over my face and let out a miserable laugh. “Everything’s blown gone wrong today. I’m sorry, Soph. I wanted it to be perfect for you.”

She sniffs, holding up the cards with the clues and love notes I made for her. “These were pretty perfect to me.”

I cross the room and pull her into my arms for a hug. My muscles relax as soon as we touch, her floral scent calming the nerves that have wracked my mind all day.

“You didn’t even get the last card. The most important one.” I sigh. “Your truck broke down, the music is all wrong, and you don’t even want to see your cake. This is the worst proposal ever.”

“You haven’t even proposed yet,” she says into my shirt. Her face lights up.

I’m greeted with eyes filled to the brim with adoration and tears. “I don’t care about clues or cakes or any of that. You could have proposed to me anywhere, even on the side of the highway while they towed my truck and I’d still be so happy.”

“I love you.”

“I love you too. Now, am I getting proposed to today or not?”

Her giggles spur me into motion. I hug her again, suck in a deep breath, and then lead her back out to the heart of roses. My legs shake as I kneel in front of her.

“Sophie Amelia Cunningham.” I look up at her, tears already burning my eyes. “My Soph. I have loved you since I knew what love was, but I

er. I'm love with you over these past few months. You are my best friend, the
my life, and the best chef in the world.”

on her She laughs, tears flowing down her cheeks.

ght as a “You deserve so much more than you think you do. I plan on sp
every day for the rest of our lives showing you your worth.” I pull
ing has velvet ring box and open it. Sophie gasps, a hand over her heart. “W
marry me?”

wrote. She drags me up to stand and throws her arms around my neck.

“Yes. I will marry you. I can't see my future without you in it, and
relax asever want to.” Her lips are against my ear. I smile through my own te
ked my pull back to kiss her. Our kisses are salty and sweet, the perfect balan
heart is doing backflips. *I get to kiss my best friend for the rest of my li*
into her Breaking our kiss, I pull the ring out of the cushion and slide it o
't even left hand. She stares down at it, the large oval emerald glinting in tl
while the surrounding diamonds sparkle.

ifts and “It's perfect,” she whispers and yanks me by my shirt into another
n't care almost possessive kiss.

on the When we separate again, breathing heavily, I rest my forehead
y.” hers. “I love you.”

“I love you more.” Her breath fans my face when she speaks. I wa
this close to her all the time. It's a marrow-deep craving that has my
breath, digging into the dip of her waist.

lown in “Impossible,” I whisper and she kisses along my jawline, her lip
rosebud brushing over my skin. My eyes close as I cherish her being
ing my a new way.

I fell in “I have a question,” Sophie murmurs against my jaw and I let out a
laugh.

love of “Of course you do.”

I’m positively dazed when she kisses the corner of my mouth.

“What if we got married soon?”

ending I blink open my eyes and tilt my head to look at her. “Soon as in?”

out the “As in next weekend.” She fidgets with the buttons on my dress sl
/ill youthat crazy?”

I shake my head and grin. “That’s not crazy, it sounds *perfect.*” *L*
hits me. “We can get married in my mom’s garden. I know she wou
I don’tit.”

ars and She nods, an excited fervor washing over both of us as the idea
ice. My “We’ll invite just our close friends and family. Keep it small.”

fe. “Our friends!” I laugh, pushing a hand through my hair. “They
nto herwaiting in the parking lot right now. Well, Sebastian couldn’t make
he lighteveryone else is down there.”

“That’s good because I need Lottie’s planning expertise to pull th
urgent,She pulls out her phone to text everyone but pauses. “We’re getting m
she says, as if just now realizing it.

against “We are. Are you ready for it?”

Her face glows with joy. “More than ready.” We share a chaste, bu
nt to bekiss, then she sends the text.

fingers Barely a minute goes by before my apartment door is beaten down
friends. They rush inside and we’re engulfed in a sea of congratulato
s like aand shoulder pats. All of the smiles and laughter make warmth radia
mine inwithin me. *This is real, she said yes.*

“So, we have another announcement,” Sophie says over everyor
breathygroup quiets, anticipation swirling in the air. “We’ve decided to get
this weekend!” Everyone cheers and we’re pulled into more embraces.

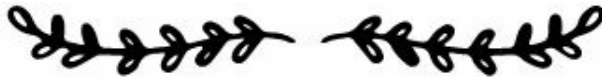
“We’re going to need y’all’s help to pull this off,” I speak up. “It mean the world to us to have everyone there.”

“Of course, we’ll help, man,” Wyatt says and squeezes my shoulder

“There’s something so romantic about a surprise wedding.” Lottie hirt. “Isa dreamy sigh. “I will help however you need me to!”

“You guys are the best,” Sophie says. Her gray eyes are twinkli
An ideashe’s bouncing on her toes. I tuck her under my arm and hold he
ld loveplanning on never letting go.

sets in.



y’re all “You don’t have to do this if you don’t want to,” I tell Sophie, study
: it, butgray eyes for any flicker of doubt.

She’s about to call her mom to tell her about the engagement and w
is off.” They’ve barely talked since their argument at the ball. Whitney did
arried,” text apologizing for some of what she said, which I found ironic si
always gets mad at Sophie for texting instead of calling, but I ke
opinion to myself.

it warm “I know. I want to. She’s my mom, and I love her, even if she
treated me right in the past.”

by our As protective as I am of Sophie, I don’t want to be the one keep
ry hugs from repairing her relationship with her mom. I want them to have
te from relationship. I couldn’t imagine not having one with my mom. So, I’n
to be supportive, while also helping Sophie set boundaries when neede
ie. The “Okay, but if she says something rude, there’s an end-call butto
married reason.”

She would. Sophie laughs at me but nods in agreement. “I won’t let her ruin this.” She pulls in a deep breath, then presses Whitney’s contact and places the speaker.

She lets out “Hello?” Whitney sounds unsure and timid, a rare tone that isn’t me.

She says “Hey, Mom, how are you?”

She says “I’m doing well. Is everything okay?” Sophie looks up at me and I give her an encouraging nod.

“Everything is great, actually. Bennett and I are engaged.”

The line is silent for a moment. Long enough for me to open my mouth to comment, but then Whitney speaks.

She says “That’s wonderful, Sophie. I’m so happy for you, darling.” There’s nothing lively in her voice, not a touch of giddiness, but she’s not faking either, which is a blessing.

She says “Thank you.” Sophie pauses, gathers her strength, and begins to speak. “There’s something more, though. We’re getting married this week. Before you ask, I’m *not* pregnant, we just don’t want to wait.”

“Okay.” There’s a pain in Whitney’s voice that makes my heart ache. I haven’t wonder if she’s assuming she’s not invited. It wouldn’t be outrageous for her not to invite her after all that has happened, but even in all my animosity toward her, I feel sorry for her too.

She says “We wanted to invite you to the wedding. It’s going to be at Dee’s house at 6 PM. We’re going to have a small reception afterward.” Sophie talks quickly, throwing the words at the phone like a grenade and then taking cover behind my chest.

“I-um,” Whitney clears her throat, her voice thick with emotion. “I’ll check my schedule, but I believe I can make it.”

s.” She “Good,” Sophie replies. “That’s good. I hope I’ll see you there. Go
call on Mom.”

“Goodbye.”

lost on The line goes silent. Sophie stares at the phone in her hand.

“That went surprisingly well,” I comment.

“Yes, it did.” Sophie blinks a few times, then tips her chin up to
give her me. “We’re getting married this weekend.”

I press a heartfelt kiss to her lips. “I can’t wait.”

mouth to

There’s

not cruel

again.

weekend.

sink. I

of us to

toward

house,

looks fast,

against

“I will

“Good,” Sophie replies. “That’s good. I hope I’ll see you there. Goodbye, Mom.”

“Goodbye.”

The line goes silent. Sophie stares at the phone in her hand.

“That went surprisingly well,” I comment.

“Yes, it did.” Sophie blinks a few times, then tips her chin up to look at me. “We’re getting married this weekend.”

I press a heartfelt kiss to her lips. “I can’t wait.”

CHAPTER 27

CHAPTER 27

Sophie Cunningham

The Wedding Day

“I’m not nervous. Should I be nervous?” I ask Lottie as she touches curls in my hair. I just had my bridal portraits done by MJ’s family Evie. She happened to be traveling through Georgia at the perfect stop in. Bennett’s nana was our backup choice, so I’m grateful she ha Nana *really* likes the zoom feature.

“Some people are nervous on their wedding day, some aren’t. It’s deal.” She flashes me a warm smile. MJ, Grace, and Zara are downstairs in the crowd. Lottie is here to do my final touches Bennett’s dad comes to get me. I’m grateful for him because the missing my dad on this day is hard enough without wondering who walk me down the aisle. Things with my mom might be better, enough to ask her to stand in for Dad.

“Thank you, Lottie,” I say after she sprays one last coat of hairspray

“Of course. I’m going to head downstairs unless you need anything She gives my shoulders an encouraging squeeze.

“I’m good!”

She peeks out the door to make sure no one is around, blows me a kiss, then slides out in a flutter of pink tulle. I told the girls we wouldn’t have a formal bridal party, but I wanted pictures with all of them still. So they all wear different dresses according to their personalities. Lottie’s baby doll-style pinup dress makes her look like a bubblegum princess. It wouldn’t be my choice, but I couldn’t have found a more suitable ensemble for her.

I stand and smooth my hands over the skirt of my dress. There wasn’t a lot of time to go dress shopping, but I managed to find one I loved at the boutique we went to. It’s a short, v-neck satin dress that cinches at the waist. It stops a little bit above my knee and pairing it with the strappy white sandals I borrowed from Lottie has lengthened my legs. My veil is short, just up to the

friend, time to id time, no big already before pain of should but not
It’s a different look than what I would have imagined, yet perfect for the same time. Lottie says it’s adorable for a garden wedding, and since she’s the fashionista in our group, I’m going to believe her. When I bought the dress, my mind briefly wondered if my mom would love or hate it. I grabbed it, thought, stared at it, then tossed it in the trashcan in my brain. Progress already before it. “Knock, knock,” Dee’s voice singsongs through the door before she comes in. When her eyes land on me, she gasps. “Look at you.”

I laugh and hold my hands out to grab hers. “You’ve already said you should wear this today.”

“Yes, but now you have *the look*.” She squeezes my hands.

“The look?”

“Yes, the one that all brides get right before they go down the aisle. It’s not just the dress, it’s this rosy glow like a sun rising in your eyes. You have it.”

“What about Ben? Is he turning into a rose?” My question is in jest.

am actually curious how Ben is doing. He kissed me goodnight last night, and I haven't seen him since. It was some kiss too ... my skin heats just thinking about it.

I chose "He's a wreck is what he is." She laughs and shakes her head. "Not nervous at all," she assures me. "Just asking me every two seconds if I'm ready to go down to the garden yet. As soon as he woke up this morning, he was grumbling about how wedding traditions were dumb and he shouldn't waste a lot of time spending the whole day with his best friend."

He first I giggle and feel my heart grow in my chest. I'm marrying a man who doesn't even want to spend a day without me. "I've missed him all day long," I admit.

Henry, Bennett's dad, appears in the doorway, Evie right behind him with her camera hanging from her neck.

"Is it time?" I ask, a flicker of nerves sparking to life in my stomach. "We're ready if you are," Evie says and Henry holds out his elbow for me. "Let's get you two married so Bennett will quit whining," Henry says. A burst of laughter escapes me, dissipating the nerves just as quickly as they came.

I hold onto Henry's bicep and walk through the house toward the doors that lead out to the garden. Memories float around me as I see Bennett and I racing through the hall as kids. Dee letting me sleep in the living room with Bennett after my dad died. Us sneaking snacks from the kitchen, then almost kissing in the same kitchen a few months ago.

When the doors open and my eyes land on Bennett for the first time in a while. It's all of those memories swirl together and tears spring up. He's standing under a wrought-iron arbor threaded with vines and flowers. He's got on a linen suit with a white dress shirt that has a few of the buttons undone.

ght and smile is gigantic, sending my heart on a rocket toward the sun. If I
hinking holding onto Henry's arm, I'd run over the cobblestone path and ju

Bennett's arms. Forget decorum, I just want to kiss him.

l. "Not But I hold tight to Henry and smile at our friends and family sit
t's time either side of the path. My eyes catch on my mom, who gives me
he was smile and nod. I tip my head toward her with a smile of my own and e
l get to makes my throat tight. Maybe things are going to get better.

At the end of the aisle, I'm passed off to Bennett, and the mom
an who hands touch, my tears are loosed. Thank goodness for waterproof n
r too," I because I don't think I'm going to be able to stop any time soon.

Bennett lets go of one of my hands and reaches into his suit jacket,
im without a linen handkerchief. Everyone in the crowd laughs with me a
under my eyes.

. The pastor starts to speak, but I don't hear a thing. I'm focused
for me. gorgeous man in front of me. His kind eyes are a vivid green today, i
ays and the trees surrounding us. When it's time for vows, I almost miss i
as they because I'm so lost in him.

"Bennett." My voice cracks at his name. "My whole life, you've b
French constant. When someone was mean at school, you were there. When I
I walk. award, you were there. When my dad died—" Emotion clogs my thr
l in the Bennett rubs a thumb soothingly over my knuckles, tears wetting his fi
in the "You were there. I took that for granted at one point, but not anymore.

see your unwavering loyalty for what it really is: love. You have lo
e today, through my darkest days, and I'm so grateful for that. I promise to
g undersame for you.

a beige "I vow to stand by your side through everything that comes our v
ne. His love you and show you just how grateful I am to have you every day

wasn't rest of our lives. Til death do us part."

np into Bennett steals the handkerchief from me and wipes at his own eyes, eliciting more laughs from our friends and family.

ting on "Sophie," he begins, his voice husky from crying. "I spent most of my life with my head down, trying to achieve what I thought were the most important things in life. All the while, I was missing out on you."

When I finally saw you for the first time, I mean really saw you, it was like someone flipped on the lights after years of living in the dark. Everything clicked. From that moment on I knew that I had to show you what we could

do, even though I messed up in the process, you still loved me. Thank you for not giving up on us. So, that's my promise to you: I vow to never give up on us, even when it gets messy and hard. I promise to love you and cherish you

and show you just how magnificent you are every day for the rest of our lives. Til death do us part."

rivaling "Mush," I whisper, so just he can hear, and he grins.

my cue The rest of the ceremony is a blur of pure, radiant joy. When it's time for us to kiss, Bennett dips me back. I squeal right before his lips meet mine. Our kiss is sincere and agonizingly fast, and when Bennett pulls me back to standing, I'm lightheaded, wishing the kiss hadn't ended. The crooked grin he wears tells me he's thinking the same thing.

ace too. We walk down the aisle hand-in-hand, off to make more memories together. I am decidedly the luckiest woman in the world, because I've truly married my best friend.

do the

vay. To

for the

rest of our lives. Til death do us part.”

Bennett steals the handkerchief from me and wipes at his own face, eliciting more laughs from our friends and family.

“Sophie,” he begins, his voice husky from crying. “I spent most of my life with my head down, trying to achieve what I thought were the most important things in life. All the while, I was missing out on you. When I finally saw you for the first time, I mean really *saw* you, it was like someone flipped on the lights after years of living in the dark. Everything changed. From that moment on I knew that I had to show you what we could be, and even though I messed up in the process, you still loved me. Thank you for not giving up on us. So, that’s my promise to you: I vow to never give up on us, even when it gets messy and hard. I promise to love you and cherish you and show you just how magnificent you are every day for the rest of our lives. Til death do us part.”

“Mush,” I whisper, so just he can hear, and he grins.

The rest of the ceremony is a blur of pure, radiant joy. When it’s finally time for us to kiss, Bennett dips me back. I squeal right before his lips crash into mine. Our kiss is sincere and agonizingly fast, and when Bennett lifts me back to standing, I’m lightheaded, wishing the kiss hadn’t ended. The crooked grin he wears tells me he’s thinking the same thing.

We walk down the aisle hand-in-hand, off to make more memories together. I am decidedly the luckiest woman in the world, because I have truly married my best friend.

Epilogue

Meadow Jane (MJ) Carter

Another best friend married. I sip my lemon water, watching Sophie Bennett dance under twinkle lights surrounded by flowers. It's practically scene out of a movie, it's that perfect.

There's not an ounce of bitterness in me when I see my two friends' eyes at each other, lovestruck grins permanently twisting their lips. I've never said lips aren't mashed together. That part I could do without.

All of my other friends are on the dance floor with their significant others too. These moments make it glaringly obvious that I'm the last one without a man. It doesn't bother me personally, but others tend to take it upon themselves to throw their pity at me in the form of arm pats and not-so-sympathetic looks. The whole thing is nauseating to say the least. I *need* a man.

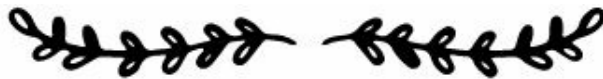
Wyatt dips Grace back, her radiant smile flashing at me from upside down before he pulls her back up and in for a kiss. An unbidden ache twists like a knife in between my ribs. I chug the lemon water like it's something st

hoping to rinse away the feeling. No, I don't need what they have, but I want it at times.

Turning away from the dance floor, I fill my glass again. I purposefully pour slowly, so that I can keep my back to the dance floor longer, arousing suspicion. Soon I'll have stayed long enough to warrant staying away, but that time hasn't come just yet. Once I'm away from everyone, my longing will subside. It always does, even if lately it's taken longer than usual.

It has to subside because there's no other option for me. I won't give in to the temptation. Because the only thing worse than the burning loneliness is the excruciating pain of losing someone, and I will *never* feel that pain

he and
ically a



Sebastian Holt

making I'm smiling so much my face hurts. Bennett and Sophie deserve the
That is, and I'm so happy for them. Their ceremony was a tear-jerker—though
it. I admit that to anyone—and now getting to celebrate with them has me g
others, like a fool. I wasn't sure I'd make it, but I left Maddie with my m
without a drove to Savannah as fast as I could.

t upon Weddings usually make me wish for a wife of my own, and tonight
subtle exception. I'd give anything to be out there with my own beautiful
I don't spinning circles around the dance floor. But until that time comes, I'll
and nod to my friends as they enjoy their special day.

e down My eyes lock on a raven-haired woman walking toward Sophie
s like a Bennett. She's petite in stature, but the confident way she carries
ronger, makes her seem taller. The sangria-colored dress she's wearing :

out I do against her ankles as she walks, revealing gold sandals that remind something ancient Greek royalty would have worn. Her lithe arms are covered in bangles that match her sandals, further cementing the idea without being a princess from another time.

reaking She's the most beautiful woman I've seen in a long, long time. 'one, the something hypnotizing about the way her hair swings back and forth to than walks. I think the only reason every man here isn't staring at her is that they have their own wives and girlfriends.

ve in to In short—she's captivating. Sophie throws her arms around the v iness is who gives her a hesitant but tender embrace in return. I stand, intent o again. over to try and get an introduction. What better way to meet someone a wedding? It's a little cliché, but there's a reason those clichés exist: they worked for someone somewhere.

I take a few steps toward the group when my phone starts to buzz in my pocket. My chin falls to my chest. *Maddie*. I pull out my phone and, enough, her name and face are lighting up the screen. Stepping out onto the outskirts of the party, I answer it.

ringing “Hey, Maddie, everything okay?” I ask as soon as I pick up.

om and “Hey, Dad! Sorry to bother you. I just wanted to know if me and Yasmine could doordash dessert to the house?”

ht is no I run a hand over my mouth, stifling an annoying sigh. “Why did you ask Gram? I told you she was in charge tonight.”

ll smile “Yeahhh, I went to ask her and ... she's asleep on the sectional.”

“Okay,” I sigh, unable to hold it in. “You can order dessert, but you have to wake Gram up when it gets there. Don't you or Yasmine answer the phone for yourself? Understand?”

swishes “Got it. Thanks, Dad!” Her cheery voice bats away the rain clouds

l me off frustration that were beginning to form. It's not like she knows I'm g
ms are talk to a gorgeous woman and is trying to stop me. She's just a kid h
a of her sleepover.

“You're welcome. I'll see you tomorrow. I love you.”

There's “Love you too, see you soon.”

as she She hangs up and I let out a half-laugh. At least it wasn't
because conversation. I turn back to the reception, scanning the crowd
mysterious woman. She's nowhere to be found.

woman, I'm tempted to pinch myself to be sure I didn't dream this whole
n going With how magnetic and enchanting she was, it wouldn't be unbelieve
than at woke up tomorrow having imagined it all.

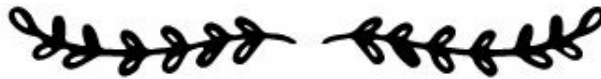
t. They I sink into a chair, shaking my head at my loss.

Maybe it wasn't meant to be.

z in my

nd sure

to the



Want to know when MJ and Sebastian's book, *One Last Play*, comes out?
[Sign up for my newsletter](#) and get a FREE book as a gift!

asmine You can also find the rest of the [Sweet Peach Series on Amazon](#) and
you haven't read all of them yet!

n't you

ou have

ie door.

ouds of

frustration that were beginning to form. It's not like she knows I'm going to talk to a gorgeous woman and is trying to stop me. She's just a kid having a sleepover.

"You're welcome. I'll see you tomorrow. I love you."

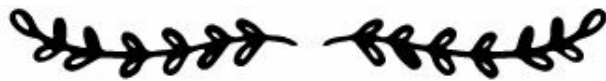
"Love you too, see you soon."

She hangs up and I let out a half-laugh. At least it wasn't a long conversation. I turn back to the reception, scanning the crowd for the mysterious woman. She's nowhere to be found.

I'm tempted to pinch myself to be sure I didn't dream this whole thing. With how magnetic and enchanting she was, it wouldn't be unbelievable if I woke up tomorrow having imagined it all.

I sink into a chair, shaking my head at my loss.

Maybe it wasn't meant to be.



Want to know when MJ and Sebastian's book, *One Last Play*, comes out? [Sign up for my newsletter](#) and get a FREE book as a gift!

You can also find the rest of the [Sweet Peach Series on Amazon and KU](#) if you haven't read all of them yet!

Author's Note

Hello darling reader,

Wow, I can't believe this book is over. I've been dreaming of Sophie Bennett since I wrote *The Love Audit*. Over the course of the series characters changed a lot. Originally I thought Sophie would be the love with Bennett and denying her feelings for him because of friendship. That ended up being not right for them though. In *One Song*, I found myself loving the idea of Bennett realizing his feelings was 'too late'. And being the kind of author who lets the characters go where they want, I went for it! It shifted into having this fake dating element with Bennett pursuing her through it which was so much fun to write.

Sophie's inner issues surrounding her identity and self-worth spoke to me on a deeply personal level. I wanted to show her overcome them on her own but also show sweet Ben fighting for and with her every step of the way. That's why I had their story continue on after they got together. I was nervous about it dragging, but I also knew that Sophie needed those scenes to grow as a character. I hope you agreed or at least didn't mind haha.

The love in this book was so rich and sweet for me. I loved includ

‘mush’ lines in here because it’s actually something I say to my h when I don’t know how to respond to his compliments or gestures. that little piece of reality always helps me ground my books. I don’t that I’ll ever write a book without an element from my own relations life.

I also played with a little more heat, a little more sizzle, in this bo to make everything about me, but I’m changing and growing as an over the course of this series. A part of that growth is finding my own believe this book is getting closer to what my voice is meant to be. B author is a scary, vulnerable thing because you have to write what y while simultaneously hoping your readers love it too. So, that’s m hie andhere. That you loved Sophie and Bennett and you’ll keep lovi s, theircharacters for books to come. If you did, please come find me or one in [media or my website](#) and let me know!

of their Happy reading,

e More Annah

when it

) where

ent and

e to me

er own,

ie way.

worried

for her

ling the

‘mush’ lines in here because it’s actually something I say to my husband when I don’t know how to respond to his compliments or gestures. Having that little piece of reality always helps me ground my books. I don’t know that I’ll ever write a book without an element from my own relationships or life.

I also played with a little more heat, a little more sizzle, in this book. Not to make everything about me, but I’m changing and growing as an author over the course of this series. A part of that growth is finding my own voice. I believe this book is getting closer to what my voice is meant to be. Being an author is a scary, vulnerable thing because you have to write what you love while simultaneously hoping your readers love it too. So, that’s my hope here. That you loved Sophie and Bennett and you’ll keep loving my characters for books to come. If you did, please come find me on [social media or my website](#) and let me know!

Happy reading,

Annah

Acknowledgments

My Jesus, thank you for continually showing me what true love looks like.

To my husband, Ryan, thank you for reading my manuscript and making me laugh so hard I cry with your comments. You have a fan club for a reason. I'm grateful for your unwavering support and love that keeps me going.

To my bestie and critique partner, Dulcie, thank you for helping me work out plot issues, rewrite lines, and so much more. I wish there was a way I could show my gratitude better than these words.

Special thanks to my insta sisters Baylie, Bethany, and Kathryn. Your encouragement is so precious to me. It's also hard to beat our messages. They'd make a romcom all on their own!

Huge thanks to my editor Caitlin. You catch things I wouldn't have thought of and you always help make my books better while encouraging me along the way.

Thank you to my cover designer, Stephanie, for working with my characters and timelines and creating covers that people want on their shelves. You are a top notch artist and a wonderful person to boot!

Lastly, thank you to my readers. I'm living the dream, and you're making it happen!

like.

making

for a

steps me

me talk

a way I

! Your

voice

ve ever

ing me

changes

ou're a

Lastly, thank you to my readers. I'm living the dream, and you're making it happen!

About The Author

Annah Conwell is a sweet romcom author who loves witty banter heroines, and swoony heroes. She has a passion for writing books that you LOL one minute and melt into a puddle of 'aw' the next. You can find her living out her days in a small town in Sweet Home Alabama (roll!) with the love of her life (aka her husband), Ryan, and her two golden retriever pups, Prince and Ella. Most of the time she's snuggled up under her favorite blanket on the couch, reading way too many books to call it anything other than an addiction, or writing her little hopeless romantic heart out.

About The Author

Annah Conwell is a sweet romcom author who loves witty banter, sassy heroines, and swoony heroes. She has a passion for writing books that make you LOL one minute and melt into a puddle of 'aw' the next. You can find her living out her days in a small town in Sweet Home Alabama (roll tide roll!) with the love of her life (aka her husband), Ryan, and her two goofball pups, Prince and Ella. Most of the time she's snuggled up under her favorite blanket on the couch, reading way too many books to call it anything other than an addiction, or writing her little hopeless romantic heart out.